



*Philip Zmarll & Beaufidell.*

*J. Thelot sculp.*

H  
S  
A  
M  
Who  
B  
S  
Y  
to  
I. H  
wh  
he  
Cin  
tha  
St.  
tab  
pu  
II. F  
wa  
ou  
ha  
Wit  
Prin  
in  
F





*Philip Quarrell & Beaufidell.*

*J. Threlk.*

H  
S  
A  
M  
Who  
B  
S  
Y  
to  
I. H  
wh  
he  
Cin  
tha  
St.  
tab  
pu  
II. F  
wa  
ou  
ha  
Wit  
Prin  
in  
F

THE  
HERMIT:  
Or, The Unparallel'd  
SUFFERINGS  
And Surprising  
ADVENTURES  
OF  
Mr. PHILIP QUARLL,  
An ENGLISHMAN:

Who was lately discovered by Mr. DORRINGTON, a *Bristol* Merchant, upon an uninhabited Island in the SOUTH-SEA; where he has lived above FIFTY YEARS, without any Human Assistance; still continues to reside, and will not come away.

CONTAINING,

I. His Conferences with Those who found him out; to whom he recites the most material Circumstances of his Life; as, that he was born in the Parish of *St. Giles*, educated by the charitable Contribution of a Lady, and put 'Prentice to a Locksmith.

II. How he left his Master, and was taken up with a notorious House-breaker, who was hanged; how, after his Escape,

he went to Sea a Cabin-Boy, married a famous Whore, list'd himself a common Soldier, turned Singing-master, and married three Wives, for which he was tried and condemned at the *Old Bailey*.

III. How he was pardoned by King CHARLES II. turned Merchant, and was shipwrecked on this desolate Island on the Coast of *Mexico*.

---

With a curious FRONTISPIECE and a Map of the ISLAND.

---

THE FOURTH EDITION.

---

L O N D O N :

Printed for J. WREN, opposite *New Exchange Buildings* in the *Strand*; S. CROWDER, H. WOODGATE, J. FULLER, and J. WARCUS. 1768.

THE NEW YORK

ADVERTISERS

AND PUBLISHERS

OF THE

NEW YORK

ADVERTISERS

AND PUBLISHERS

OF THE

NEW YORK

ADVERTISERS

AND PUBLISHERS

OF THE

NEW YORK

ADVERTISERS

AND PUBLISHERS

OF THE

NEW YORK



T H E  
P R E F A C E.

 *RUTH* and *Fiction* have, of late, been so promiscuously blended together, in Performances of this Nature; that, in the present Case, it seems absolutely necessary to distinguish the *one* from the *other*. If *Robinson Crusoe*, *Moll Flanders*, and *Colonel Jack*, have had their Admirers among the lower Rank of Readers; it is as certain, that the Morality in *Masquerade*, which may be discover'd in the Travels of *Lemuel Gulliver*, has been an equal Entertainment to the superior Class of Mankind.

Now it may, without the least Arrogance, be affirmed, that tho' this *surprising Narrative* be not so replete with



*vulgar Stories* as the former, or so interspersed with a *Satirical Vein*, as the last of the above-mentioned Treatises; yet it is certainly of more Use to the Public, than either of them, because every Incident, herein related, is real Matter of Fact. But because my Share in this Work, is no other than that of a bare Editor; I think it my Duty to account for the Possession of this Manuscript.

It was put into my Hands, about a Year ago, by Mr. *Dorrington*, an eminent Merchant, with full Liberty to publish it when, and in what Manner, I thought most proper. I hope therefore it will not be deemed impertinent to give some Account of my Friend, as a Reputation to the Work itself.

“ Mr. *Edward Dorrington* is descended from a very ancient and honourable Family in *Staffordshire*. His Grandfather, Mr. *Joseph Dorrington*, removed out of that County, to *Frome* in *Somersetshire*; his Employ was that of a very considerable *Grafter*: The Issue he left at his Decease was one Son, *Richard*

## P R E F A C E.

“ *chard* (the Father of my Friend), and  
 “ two Daughters. Mr. *Richard Dor-*  
 “ *rington*, for some Time, was a Student  
 “ of *Gray's-Inn* ; but, liking a Country-  
 “ Life best, he having thoroughly qualified  
 “ himself, retired to *Frome*, the above-  
 “ mentioned Residence of his Father ;  
 “ where he married Mrs. *Margaret*  
 “ *Groves*, of *Taunton*, a Gentlewoman  
 “ of about a Thousand Pounds Fortune.  
 “ Soon after his Marriage, he went and  
 “ settled at *Bath*, where the Integrity of  
 “ his fair Practice soon rendered him  
 “ eminent in his Profession. He acquired  
 “ a very competent Estate, and died in  
 “ the Year 1708, having no other Issue  
 “ than his only Son, the present Mr.  
 “ *Edward Dorrington*, whom he had  
 “ put to be bred a Merchant, under the  
 “ Care of Mr. *Stephen Graham* of *Bristol*.  
 “ His Diligence, and courteous Beha-  
 “ viour, during his Servitude, so highly  
 “ recommended him to his Master's  
 “ Esteem, that, when his Time was ex-  
 “ pired, he admitted him into a Moiety  
 “ of his Commerce, married him to his  
 “ Daughter, and gave her an handsome  
 “ Portion suitable to his Merit.

“ The Happiness of my Acquaintance  
 “ with him began in his Apprenticeship;  
 “ and has, with the greatest Satisfaction  
 “ to me, continued ever since.”

As to the Genuineness of this Treatise, I am farther to assure the Reader, that as Mr. *Dorrington* is allowed, by all who know him, to be a Gentleman of unquestionable Veracity, and above attempting an Imposition upon the Public; so the *first* Book herein was wholly written by himself, and the *second* and *third* Books were faithfully transcribed from Mr. *Quarll's* Parchment-Roll, which was a Continuation of what my Friend had begun.

When Mr. *Dorrington* undertook this Voyage, he set Sail, as is well known, from *Bristol* to the *South-Sea*; and traded all along that Coast to *Mexico*, now called *New-Spain*.

And he is now making a second Voyage to the same Places.

To proceed to the Work itself: The *first* Book contains a Relation of Mr. *Dorrington's*

# P R E F A C E.

vii

rington's Discovery of Mr. Quarll, his several Conferences with him, a Description of the Island, and the Manner of our *Hermit's* living there; with many other curious Particulars.

The *second* and *Third* Books are the Contents of the *Hermit's* Parchment Roll above-mentioned, and contain the most surprising, as well as various Turns of Fortune ever yet recounted in any Work of this Kind. And, altho' the continued Series of Misfortunes which attended him seemed to render his Life an Example of the most unhappy State of human Nature; yet we do not find so great an Enormity in his Actions, that Vengeance should pursue him so closely by unparalleled Crosses. If Polygamy could call down such divine Resentments, we must be silent; nor farther urge his Fate.

However, for this Fact he was brought to Justice by the Laws of his Country; and he accounts for the Inducements of his committing that Sin, at his Tryal. This Reflection therefore should be wip'd off,



off, since he is now become the humblest of Penitents.

The Observations throughout these Sheets will be found to be modest, serious, and instructive, and all centre in the unerring Moral, that,

Whate'er we do, or wheresoe'er we're driv'n,  
Still, we must own, such is the Will of Heav'n.

To conclude: In the Publication of these Papers, I have discharged two Promises; the one made by Mr. *Dorrington* to the *Hermit*, and the other made by myself to Mr. *Dorrington*: And that they may meet with a Reception, as candid as they are useful, is the hearty Wish of

*The Reader's Humble Servant,*

P. L.

O N



ON THE  
HERMIT'S  
SOLITUDE.

**B**EHOLD a Man in his *first Class* of Years,  
When youthless Sports made way for growing  
Cares,

The chequer'd Fortunes of a manly Age,  
Busies reflecting Sense with Thoughts more sage:  
Various Affairs will cause a World of Woes:  
Then in the Fall of Life how sweet's Repose!  
The Calm, he now enjoys, makes full Amends  
For all he felt; Heav'n never Ill intends;  
Suffrings are sent to us from God above,  
To make us practise Faith, and sacred Love;  
Aw'd into Patience, by fresh Scenes of Fate,  
We live too soon, and learn to live too late.

In busy Worlds, and trading peopled Towns,  
 More fast we sin, than Sin itself abounds.  
 In soft Repose, *Quarll* Empires does disdain;  
 Free from Disquiet, Solitude's his Gain.  
 Thoughts more sublime, a Haven more serene,  
 Nought e'er to vex him that may cause the Spleen.  
 Methinks I with him share of *Eden's* Grove,  
 And wish no better Paradise to rove:  
 Here's not *Ambition* with her gaudy Train,  
 Nor *Envy* trampling down the Poor or Mean;  
 Nor *Avarice* nor haughty *Pride* invade,  
 Nor can *Remorse* his slumb'ring Nights upbraid  
 In Peace he rests, unenvy'd or unknown,  
 And pities Monarchs on their toilsome Throne.  
 No King that reigns, but must as Mortals die;  
 And when they rule, no Subject should ask, Wh  
 Heav'n grants them Licence; and, when God gi

Laws,

Where's the bold Man that dares dispute the Cau  
 Would the Great Men from one so mean be told  
 They serve a Crown for Int'rest and for Gold?  
 'Tis with Content *Quarll* lives; he's truly blest  
 Has nought to dread, nor is with aught distress'd  
 Prays for his Country, and its present Prince;  
 That he may reign in Heav'n, when call'd fro  
 hence,

Here, in these lonely Shades, he just uprose,  
 A Type of Resurrection to disclose;

A Resurrection from a Watry Hell,  
Where Shoals of Terrors strove which should ex-  
cell ;

A Resurrection, Emblem of the Last,  
Which will recal our ev'ry Guilt that's past ;  
Drawing a Glare of Conscience to our View,  
Of Horror for our Sins, both old and new :  
But so unspotted in his present State,  
'd wish myself as happy ; not more great :  
'd know no Change ; but, when God calls, obey,  
Prepar'd in my Account for Judgment-day :

Then happy rise from Cares, and worldly Toys,  
To more substantial and eternal Joys.

This honest HERMIT, at a transient View,  
Seems to be born all Precedent t' out-do.

Something uncommon makes him wond'rous seem :  
Sound are his Morals, drawn from ev'ry Theme.  
Thus from our *English* HERMIT learn to know,  
That early Piety opposes Woe.

Thro' ev'ry Stage of Life see *Philip* tost,  
And on a desert Shore by Tempest cast,  
Where he's most happy, when imagin'd lost :  
So true it is, the GODS our Good design,  
As lab'ring Slaves dig Diamonds from a Mine.  
From rugged Rocks the Sailors gain a Prize,  
And, shipwreck'd oft, from Death to Life arise ;  
So may we at the last dread Trumpet's Sound,  
By true Repentance here on Earth, be found,  
Acceptable in Heav'n, where Joys abound !

In

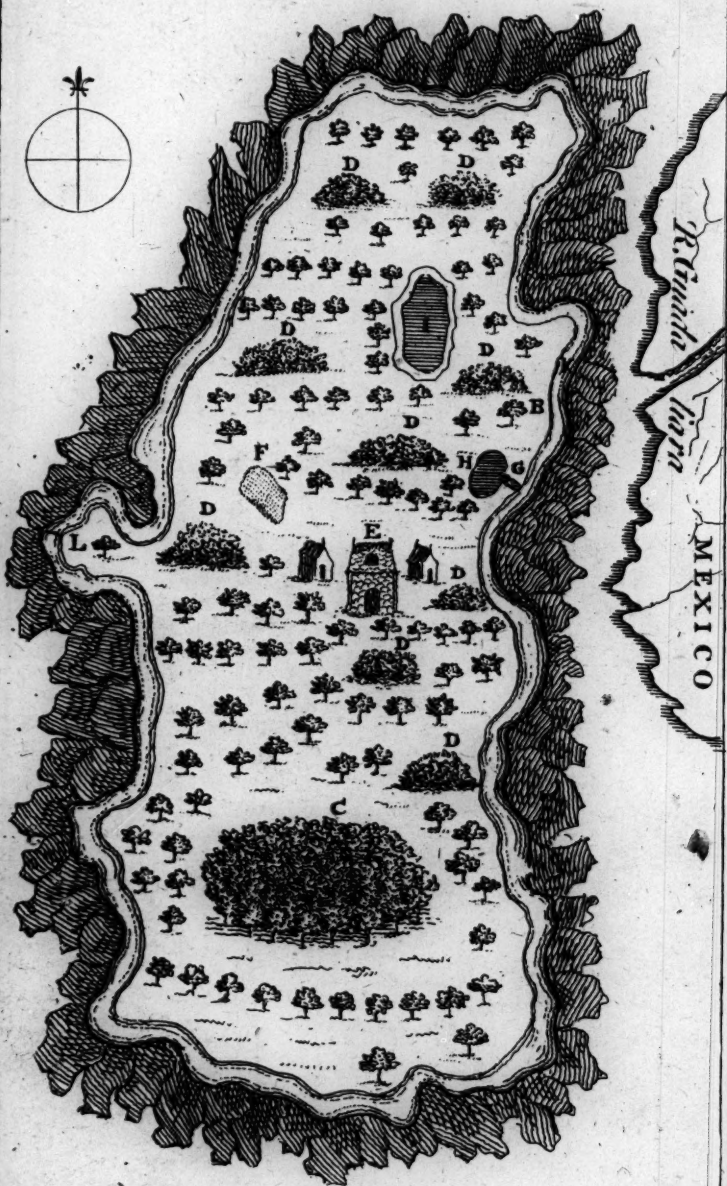


In grateful Hymns hail in the new Spring-day,  
And, like the Angels, never cease to pray :  
A Kingdom *Quarll* doth undisturb'd enjoy ;  
He's rais'd a Monarch, from an 'abject Boy.  
And here I can't omit the pencil'd Plan  
Of *Beaufidelle* his Monkey, and his Man.  
The docile Beast most servilely obeys,  
And justly merits more than Human Praise ;  
A Beauty of his Kind, good natur'd too,  
A Brute so pleasing, wonderful and new,  
Subservient to his Lord, loving and just :  
Where's Human Servant we can thus intrust ?





*A. Map of the Island Drawn  
by Philip Quarll.*





T H E  
*ENGLISH HERMIT.*

---

B O O K I.

---

*An ACCOUNT how Mr. QUARLL  
was found out ; with a Description of  
his Dress, Habitation, and Utensils ;  
as also his Conversation with the Per-  
sons who first discovered him.*



A V I N G concluded those Mer-  
cantile Affairs, which I undertook,  
by this Voyage, to negotiate ; and  
being upon my Return for *England*,  
and Wind-bound ; during my Stay  
I daily walked about the Sea-shore.  
Very early one Morning, the Weather being ex-  
treme fair, and the Sea wonderful calm, as I was  
taking my usual Turn, I accidentally fell into Dis-  
course with a *Spanish Mexican* Inhabitant, named  
*Atvarado* : And, as we were viewing the Rocks  
which abound in those Seas, he desired me to take  
B notice



notice of a vast long one about seven Leagues from Shore, which he said was supposed to inclose some Land, by its great Extent; but the Access to it was very dangerous, by reason of the Rocks, which reach so far under Water, being in some Places too shallow for Boats, and in others too deep to ford over; and the Sea commonly very rough in that Place, hitherto prevented farther Research, supposing the Advantage which might accrue from the Land, would not counterveil the Cost and Trouble of making it inhabitable; for that he and some Friends had on a fine Day, as it now was, the Curiosity to go as near as they could with Safety, which was about fifty Yards from the main Rock, but were forced to return as unsatisfied as they went; only, that he had the Pleasure of catching some delicious Fish, which lay playing upon the Surface of the Water, having a Rod in his Hand, and Lines in his Pocket, being seldom without, when he walks on the Sea-shore: These Fish are somewhat larger than an Herring in its Prime, skinned like a Mackerel, made as a Gudgeon, and of divers beautiful Colours; especially if caught in a fair Day; having since observed, that they are more or less beautiful, according to the Serenity of the Weather.

The Account he gave me of them excited my Curiosity to go and catch some; and he being, as usual, provided with Tackle, we picked up a Parcel of yellow Maggots, which breed in dead Tortoises upon the Rock, at which those Fishes bite very eagerly.

Thus equipped with all Necessaries for the Sport, we agreed with a young Fellow, one of the Long-boat's Crew, belonging to the Ship I was come over in; whose Master being just come on Shore, and not expected to return speedily, he readily

consented to row us thither for about the Value of a Shilling.

Being come to the Place, we found extraordinary Sport: the Fishes were so eager, that our Lines were no sooner in but we had a bite.

Whilst we were fishing, the young Man that rowed us thither, 'spying a Clift in the Rock, thro' which he saw a Light, had a Mind to see what was at the other Side; so put off his Cloaths in order to wade to it: Thus, having taken the Hitcher of the Boat, he gropes along for sure Footing, the Rock being very full of Holes.

Being come to the Cleft, he creeps through, and in a short Time returns, calling to us with Precipitation, which expressed both Joy and Surprize: Gentlemen! Gentlemen! said he, I have made a Discovery of a new Land, and the finest that the Sun ever shone on: Leave off your Fishing; you'll find here much better Business. Having by that time caught a pretty handsome Dish of Fish, we put up our Tackling, fastened our Boat to the Rock, and so we went to see this new-found Land.

Being come at the other Side of the Rock, we saw, as he said, a most delightful Country, but despaired going to it, there being a Lake about a Mile long at the Bottom of the Rock, which parted it from the Land; for neither *Alvarado* nor myself could swim; but the young Fellow, who could, having leaped into the Water, finding it all the Way but Breast high, we went in also, and waded to the other Side, which ascended gently, about five or six Feet from the Lake, to a most pleasant Land, flat and level, covered with a curious Grass, something like Chamomile, but of no Smell, and of an agreeable Taste: It bore also abundance of fine lofty Trees, of different Kinds and Make, which in several Places stood in Clusters,

composing Groves of different Height and Largeness. Being come to a Place where the Trees stood in such a Disposition as gave our Sight a greater Scope, we saw, at some Distance, a most delightful Wood of considerable Extent. The Agreeableness of the Perspective made by Nature, both for the creating Pleasure, and Condolence of Grief, prompted my Curiosity to a View of the Delights which the Distance we were at might in some Measure, rob us of: But *Alvarado*, who, till then, had discerned nothing whereby we could judge the Island to be inhabited, was fearful, and would not venture farther that Way, lest we should of a sudden be sallied upon by wild Beasts out of the Wood; and, as I could not discommend his Precaution, the Thickness of it giving room to believe there might be dangerous Creatures in it; so we went Southward, finding Numbers of fine Trees, and here and there small Groves, which we judged to be composed of forty or fifty several Trees; But, upon Examination, we found it, to our great Amazement, to proceed of only one Plant; whose outmost lower Branches, bending to the Ground, about seven or eight Feet from the middle Stem, struck Root, and became Plants, which did the same; and in that manner covered a considerable Spot of Ground; still growing less, as they stood farthest from the old Body.

Having walked some Time under that most surprising and wonderful Plant, admiring the Greatness of Nature's Works, we went on, finding several of the same in our way, wherein harboured Monkeys; but their swift Flight prevented our discerning their Colours: Yet, going on, we found there were two Kinds; one having green Backs, yellow Faces and Bellies; the other grey, with white Bellies and Faces; but both Sorts exceeding beautiful.

At some Distance we perceived three Things standing together, which I took to be Houses : I believe, said I, this Island is inhabited ; for, if I mistake not, yonder are Dwelling-places. So they are, said *Alvarado* ; and therefore I don't think it Wisdom to venture any farther, least they should be Savages and do us hurt ; so would have gone back : But I was resolved to see what they were, and persuaded him to go on ; saying, it would be time enough for us to retreat when we perceived Danger. That may be too late, said he : For as Evil doth not always succeed Danger, Danger doth not always precede Evil ; we may be surpris'd. Well, well, said I, if any People should come upon us, we must see them at some Distance ; and if we can't avoid them, here are three of us, a good long Staff with an Iron Point at one End, and an Hook at the other ; I shall exercise that, and keep them off, at least till you get away : Come along, and fear not. So I pulled him along.

Being come near enough to discern better, we found, that what we took for Houses were rather Arbours, being apparently made of green Trees : Then, indeed, I began to fancy some wild People inhabited them, and doubted whether it were safe to go nearer ; but concealed my Doubt, least I should intimidate *Alvarado* so that he should run away, to which he was very much inclined. I only slackened my Pace, which *Alvarado* perceiving, imagined that I saw some Evil coming, which he thought unavoidable ; and not daring to go from his Company, he only condoled his Misfortune ; saying, he dearly repented taking my Advice : That he feared we should pay dearly for our silly Curiosity ; for indeed those Things were more like Thieves Dens, or wild Peoples Huts, than Christians Habitations.

By this Time we were come near a Spot of Ground,



pretty clear of Trees, on which some Animals were feeding, which I took to be Goats; but *Alvarado* fancied them to be Deers, by their swift Flight at our appearing: However, I inferred by their Shyness, that we were out of the way in our Judgment concerning the Arbours: For, said I, if these were inhabited, those Creatures would not have been so scared at the Sight of Men; and, if by Nature wild, they would not graze so near Mens Habitations, had there been any body in them. I rather believe some Hermit has formerly lived there, and is either dead or gone. *Alvarado*, who to that Time had neither heard nor seen any thing that could contradict what I said, began to acquiesce to it, and goes on.

Being come within Reach of plain Discernment, we were surprized: If these, said I, be the Works of Savages, they far exceed our expert Artists. Their Regularity appeared unconfined to the Rules of Art, and complete Architecture without the Craft of the Artist; Nature and Time only being capable of bringing them to that Perfection. They were neither Houses, Huts, nor Arbours; yet had all the Usefulness and Agreements of each.

Having sufficiently admired the uncommon Beauty of the Outside without Interruption, but rather diverted with the most agreeable Harmony of various Singing-birds, as perched on a green Hedge, which surrounded about one Acre of Land near the Place, we had the Curiosity to see the Inside; and, being nearest the middlemost, we examined that first. It was about nine Feet high, and as much square; the Walls were strait and smooth, covered with green Leaves, something like those of a Mulberry Tree, lying as close and regular as Slates on a slated House: the Top went up rounding like a Cupola, and covered in the same Manner as the Sides: from each Corner, issued a strait Stem

Stem, about twelve Feet higher, bare of Branches to the Top, which were very full of Leaves, and spread over, making a most pleasant Canopy to the Mansion beneath.

Being full of Admiration at the wonderful Structure and Nature of the Place, we came to a Door which was made of green Twigs, neatly woven, and fastened, with a small Stick, through a Loop made of the same.

The Door being fastened without, gave us Encouragement to venture in; it being evident, that the Host was absent: so we opened it, and the first Thing we saw, being opposite to the Door, was, a Bed lying on the Ground, which was an hard dry Hearth, very smooth and clean: we had the Curiosity to examine what it was made of, and found it another Subject of Admiration. The Covering was a Mat about three Inches thick, made of a Sort of Grass, which, tho' as dry as the oldest Hay, was as green as a Leek, felt as soft as Cotton, and was as warm as Wool: the Bed was made of the same, and in the same Manner, but three Times as thick; which made it as easy as a Down Bed: under that lay another, but somewhat harder.

At one Side of the Room stood a Table made of two Pieces of thin Oak Board, about three Feet long, fastened upon four Sticks driven into the Ground, and by it a Chair made of green Twigs, as the Door; at the other Side of the Room lay a Chest on the Ground, like a Sailor's small Chest; over it, against the Wall, hung a Linen Jacket and Breeches, such as Seamen wear on board; on another Pin hung a large Coat, or Gown, made of the same Sort of Grass, and after the same Manner, as the Bed's Covering, but not above half an Inch thick; and a Cap by it of the same: these we supposed to be a Winter Garb for somebody.

Having viewed the Furniture of the Dwelling-place, we examined its Fabric, which we could not find out by the Outside, it being so closely covered with Leaves; but the Inside being bare, we found it to be several Trees, whose Bodies met close, and made a solid Wall, which by the Breadth of every Stem, we judged to be about six Inches thick: their Bark being very smooth, and of a pleasant Olive Colour, made a mighty agreeable Wainscoting; the Roof, which was hung very thick with Leaves, was Branches, which reached from End to End, and were crossed over by the Side ones that were woven between, which made a very even and smooth Cieling, so thick of Leaves and Branches, that no Rain could penetrate. My Companion's Uneasiness, expecting the Host's Return every Moment, hindered my examining every thing more narrowly; and, having slightly looked into the Chest, which lay open, wherein we saw nothing but Sheets of Parchment, which his haste would not permit me to look into, we went away.

Going out, we saw at one Corner of the Room, behind the Door, a Couple of Firelocks, the Sight of which much alarmed my Company, and, I must confess, startled me; for, till then, I was inclinable to believe some Hermit dwelt in the Place: but finding Arms in the room of a Crucifix, and religious Pictures, which were the common Ornaments of those religious Men, made me waver in my Opinion: and, having taken the Pieces in my Hands, which, for Rust, appeared not to have been fit for Use for many Years, renewed my former Opinion; supposing them to be the Effects of some Shipwreck, which the Hermit found upon the Rocks. But my Company, persisting in their own, hasten'd out, and would have gone quite away, without

without seeing any more, had I not, by many Arguments, made them sensible, that if those Arms had been intended for the evil Use *Alvarado* imagined, they would have been kept in better Order; to which being obliged to acquiesce, he consented to go and examine the other, it being as worthy of Admiration as that we had seen, though quite of another Nature, but much of the same Height and Make.

The next we came at was cover'd all over with the same Sort of Grass as grew on the Ground, which lay as even as though it had been mow'd and rolled: behind it were several Lodges, made, as it were, for some Dogs; but we neither saw nor heard any.

Having viewed the Place all round, we posted the young Fellow with us at the Outside, to give Notice when any Body appeared, lest we should be surprized whilst we saw the Inside: so, having open'd the Door, which was made and fasten'd after the Manner of the first, we went in, expecting to find another Dwelling-place, but it prov'd rather a Kitchen; there being no Bed, but only a Parcel of Shells, of different Sizes, which we supposed to be apply'd for Utensils, some being scorched at the Outside as having been on the Fire, but exceeding clean within: the rest were, both Inside and Outside, as fine as Nakes of Pearl.

At one End of the Room was a Hole cut in the Ground like Stew-stoves, in great Kitchens; about three or four Feet from that there was another Fire-place, made of three Stones, fit to roast at; in both which Places appeared to have been Fire lately, by Wood Coals, and Ashes fresh made. This confirm'd my Opinion, that it was an Hermitage. *Alvarado*, who all along fear'd we should meet with Men who would misuse us, was not a little



pleased to find Fire-places in room of Beds, and Kitchen Utensils instead of Weapons. I hope, said he, we are not in so great Danger as I fear'd ; here cannot be many Men, unless they croud together in yonder Place ; and, if so, they would have been here before now, had they been in the Way. His Fears being in a great Measure dispersed, we look'd about more leisurely ; and, seeing several Shells, that were cover'd, on a Shelf that lay cross two Sticks that were stuck in the Wall, which was made of Turf, we had the Curiosity to see what was in them ; and found, in one, pickled Anchovies : in others Mushrooms, Capers, and other Sorts of Pickles. Let them, said I, be who they will that dwell here, I am sure they know good Eating ; and therefore, probably, may be no Strangers to good Manners. Upon another Shelf, behind the Door, lay divers Sorts of dry'd Fishes ; and upon the Ground stood, uncovered, two Chests with Fish and Flesh in Salt.

These Provisions being somewhat too voluptuous for an Hermit, gave us room for Speculation. I have liv'd (said *Alvarado*) at *Mexico* these six Years, and have been at *Peru* above twenty Times, and yet never heard talk of this Island : the Access to it is so difficult, and dangerous, that, I dare say, we are the first that have been on these Sides of the Rocks. I am very apt to believe, that a Company of determined Buccaneers, which are said to frequent these Seas, shelter here ; and that the Habitation we have seen, and this Place, belong to their Captain ; and that the Company resorts in Caves up and down these Rocks. Really I could not well gainsay it, being too probable ; yet I would not altogether acquiesce to his Opinion, lest he should thereby take, a Motive to go away before we had seen the other Place. I must confess, said I, here's  
Room

Room for Conjectures, but no Proof of certainty: however, let it be as you say, 'tis a plain Case here are none to disturb us; therefore, whilst we have Liberty, let us see the other Place: so we fastened the Door as we found it, and went to the next, which was shut after the same Manner as the two preceding, but made of quite different Stuff; being a compleat Arbour, composed of Trees, planted within a Foot of one another, whose Branches were woven together in such a regular Manner, that they made several agreeable Compartments, and so close, that nothing but Air could enter: it was of the same Height and Bigness with the Kitchen; which stood at the other End of the Dwelling-place, which made a very uniform Wing to it.

The Coolness of the Arbour removed our Doubts of its being another Dwelling, unless only used in hot Weather.

Having sufficiently viewed the Outside, we went in, and found several Boards, like Dressers or Tables in a Pantry, on which lay divers broad and deep Shells, as beautiful as those in the Kitchen; in some of which was Butter, in others Cream and Milk. On a Shelf lay several small Cheeses, and on another a Parcel of Roots like *Jerusalem* Artichokes, which seemed to have been roasted. All this did but confirm the Opinion we were in, that it was no Hermitage; there being sufficient to gratify the Appetite, as well as to support Nature. Therefore, not knowing what to think of the Master of the House, we made no long Stay, but concluded to haste, and get our Fish dressed, it being near Dinner-time; and as the Trees stood very thick inland, and might conceal Men from our Sight till we came too near to shun 'em; we thought it proper to walk on the Outside, near the Rocks, that we might see at some Distance before us.

Walking

Walking along, a Phlegm sticking in my Throat; I happen'd to hawk pretty loud ; the Noise was answered from I believe twenty Places of the Rock, and in as many different Sounds ; which alarmed *Alvaredo*, who took it to be a Signal from Men concealed up and down the Rock, not considering the Difficulty of their coming at us ; there being a Lake at the Foot of it, which they must have been obliged to wade over, and which would have given us time to get away: but Fear, which often blinds Reason, represented the Evil infallible to his Thought, which was morally impossible. I did all I could to make him sensible they were but Ecchoes ; and, to convince him thereof, I gave a loud Hem, which was answered in like manner ; but by being a second Time repeated, and by a louder Voice, I was certain the last did not proceed from me ; which put me in Apprehension that somebody, besides myself, had hemm'd also. My Companion, whose Countenance, being turn'd as pale as Death, expressed the Excess of his Fears, would have run away, had not the Voice come from the very Way we were to go. Now, said he, (hardly able to utter his Words for trembling) you are, I hope, convinced that it would have been safer for us to retire, instead of gratifying your unreasonable Curiosity: what do you think will become of us ? the young Fellow, at these Words, falls a weeping, saying, he wish'd he had missed the getting of that Money, which was like to be dearly earn'd. I must confess, I began to be a little apprehensive of Danger, and wish'd myself safe away, but conceal'd my Thoughts ; heartening them as well as I could : and, representing the Danger equal, either moving forwards, or standing still, I at last persuaded them to go on.

We were scarce gone forty Paces farther, before we perceived, at a considerable Distance, something

thing like a Man, with another Creature, but presently lost them among the Trees, before we could have a full View of them; which made every one of us conceive a different Idea of what we had seen.

*Alvarado* would have it be a Giant, and a Man of common Size with him, and both armed Cap-à-pe. The poor Lad, who was already as bad as a Slave, being bound to a severe, ill-natur'd Master, fear'd Death more than Bondage; so took what he had seen for some She-bear, and one of her Whelps with her, to make her yet more dreadful; and, by all means, would have thrown himself into the Lake, in order to get at the other Side of the Rock: thus the Danger appeared to each of them to be what they dreaded most; but I was somewhat better compos'd in Mind than they. I gave the Object I saw the likeliest Resemblance the Time it was in Sight would permit, which I could adapt to nothing but a Man of common Size, and somewhat like a Dog with him; so persisting in my Opinion, made them waver in theirs: thus we went on something better compos'd.

Being gone about an hundred Yards farther, we saw the same again, but nearer hand, and without Interruption, the Place being pretty clear of Trees: thus having a full View, we were all, to our great Satisfaction, convinced, that what had been taken for a formidale Giant, and a terrible She-bear, was but an ordinary Man; but that which was with him running up a Tree as soon as he perceiv'd us, prevented our discerning what Animal it was: but the Man, who walked on apace, soon came within the reach of a more certain Discernment, and appeared to be a venerable old Man, with a worshipping white Beard, which covered his naked Bread, and a long Head of Hair, of the same Colour; which, spreading ever his Shoulders, hung down to his Loins.

His



His Presence, which inspired Respect more than Fear, soon recalled the frighten'd Folks scared Senses, who, to recover this Faint-heartedness excused themselves by the Misrepresentations Distance causes on Objects. The old Man, who by that time, was come near enough to discern our speaking *English*, lets fall a Bundle of Sticks he had under one Arm, and a Hatchet he carried in the other Hand, and runs to me, being the next to him, embracing me, and saying, Dear Countrymen, for I hear ye are *Englishmen*, by what Accident are ye come hither? A Place, the Approach whereof is defended by a thousand Perils and Dangers, and not to be come at but by a narrow Escape of Death. Are ye shipwrecked? No, thank God, said I, most reverend Father; it was mere Curiosity that brought us thither; these Perils, which you say defend the Approach of this Island, being absent, by the extraordinary Calmness of the Sea. But, if I may ask, Pray how came You hither? By the Help of Providence, replied the good old Man, who snatched me from out of the ravenous Jaws of Death, to fix me in this safe and peaceable Spot of Land. I was shipwrecked, Thanks to my Maker, and was saved by being cast away. I conceive, Sir, said I, you have been chased by some Pirates, and escaped Slavery by striking upon the Rocks, which surround this Island: but now you have avoided that dismal Fate, embrace the lucky Opportunity of getting away from a Place so remote from human Assistance, which your Age makes you stand in need of. That's your Mistake, replied the old Man: He who trusts in God, needs no other Help. I allow that, Sir, said I; but our Trust in God doth not require us to cast away, or despise, the Help of Man. I do not in the least question your Piety, but mistrust the Frailty of Nature, and  
Debility

Debility of Age; therefore would have you come and live within the Reach of Attendance. You may without slackening your Devotion, live in the World; you shall have no Occasion to concern yourself with any Cares that may disturb your pious Thoughts. No, replied the old Man; was I to be made Emperor of the Universe, I would not be concerned with the World again; nor would you require me, did you but know the Happiness I enjoy out of it. Come along with me; and if, after you have seen how I live here, you persist in your Advice, I will say you have no Notion of an happy Life. I have, good Sir, said I, already seen, with great Admiration, your matchless Habitation; but there are other Necessaries your Age requires: as Cloaths, to defend the Injuries of the Air; and Meat suitable to the Weakness of your Stomach. That's your Mistake, replied the old Man, I want for no Cloaths; I have a Change for every Season of the Year: I am not confined to Fashions, but suit my own Conveniencies. Now this is my Summer Dress; I put on warmer as the Weather grows colder: and for Meat, I have Fish, Flesh, and Fowls; and as choice as a Man can wish for. Come, you shall dine with me, and ten to one but I may give you Venison, and perhaps a Dish of wild Fowls too: let's go and see what Providence has sent us. So we went to a Wood, about a Mile farther, where he had fastened several low Nets, in different Gaps, in the Thickset; in one of which happened to be an Animal something like a Fawn, twice as big as an Hare, the Colour of a Fox, and faced and footed like a Goat. Did I not tell you, said the good Man, I might chance to give you Venison? Now let's look after the Fowls. So we went a little farther, to a Place where he had hung a long Net between

two

two high Trees, at the Bottom of which was fastened a Bag of the same to receive the Fowls; who in the Night, being stopped by the Net, fluttered to the Bottom. There also happened to be Game. A Couple of Fowls, made like Woodcocks, but of the Bigness and Colour of a Pheasant, were taken at the Bottom of a Bag. Now, said the old Man, these I have, without committing the Sin of bidding less for them than I know they are really worth, or making the Poulterers swear they cost them more than they did. Well, now I may give you a Dish of Fish also, 'tis but going half a Mile, or thereabouts. There's no need, Sir, said I, for any more, there are but four of us, and here's Provision for half a Score; but if you are disposed for Fish, we have some in a Boat on the other Side of a Rock: it is but going for them. Very well, said the old Man; it is but going about a Mile, then strip and wade over a Lake, then climb up a rugged Rock twice backward and forward, to fetch what we can have for only taking a pleasant Walk, all the while diverted with the sweet Harmony of a Number of fine Birds. Look here: this Complaisance often puts Men to a World of needless Trouble: come, we'll make a Shift to pick a Dinner out of these. Sir, said I, 'tis no Shift where there's such Plenty. Plenty! said the old Man; why, I tell ye, this is a second Garden of *Eden*; only here's no forbidden Fruit, nor Women to tempt a Man. I see, Sir, said I, Providence supplies you plentifully with Necessaries, if Age does not deprive you of Strength. Age! replied the old Man, why I am not so old as that comes to, neither: I was but eight-and-twenty when I was cast away, and that is but fifty Years ago. Indeed, if I lived as you do that dwell in the wise World, who hurry on your Days as if your End came on

too slow, I might be accounted old. I do not gainsay, reverend Father, but that you bear your Age wonderful well; but a Multiplicity of Days must make the strongest Nature bind: yes, Time will break the toughest Constitution, and, by what you say, you have seen a considerable Number of Years. Yes, replied the old Man, a few Days have run over my Head, but I never strove to outrun them, as they do that live too fast. Well, says he, you are a young Man, and have seen fewer Days than I; yet you may be almost worn out: come, match this, says he. With that he gave a Hem, with such a Strength and Clearness, that the Sound made my Ears tingle for some Minutes after. Indeed, Sir, said I, you have so far outdone what I can pretend to do, that I will not presume to imitate you. Then I am afraid, said he, you will prove to be the old Man. Well, then, you, or your Friend, the strongest of you, fetch hither that Stone; it does not look to be very heavy (pointing at a large Stone that lay about two Yards off.) I'll endeavour, Sir, said I, to roll it; for I dare say, it is past my Strength to lift it. So, to please the old Man, I went to take it up; but could hardly move it. Come, come, said the old Gentleman, I find that must be work for me. With that he goes, takes up the Stone, and tosses it to the Place he bid me bring it. I see, said he, you have exerted your Strength too often, which makes you now so weak: Well, you see the Advantage of living remote from the World. Had you had less of human Assistance, I am apt to believe you would not want it so soon as you are likely to do. Come, let's make much of that little Strength we have left, taking necessary Support at proper Times: it is now past Noon; therefore let us lose no Time, but haste home to get our Dinner



Dinner ready. So we went back to the Place where the Bundle of Sticks lay, which we gave the young Fellow with us carry, and went directly to the Kitchen; where, whilst he made a Fire, one cast the Animal, and the other two pulled the Fowls. I am sorry, said the old Man, you must take that Trouble; but your Presence has frightened away my Servant, who used to do that Work for me. Have you a Servant, then, Sir? said I. Yes, said he, and one a Native of this Island. Then I find, Sir, said I, this Island is inhabited. Yes, answered the old Man, with Monkeys and myself, but nobody else, thank God: otherwise I cannot tell you, I should hardly have lived so long. The old Man, said I, I suppose that was it we saw run up the Tree. Yes, said he, my Monkey, like myself, loves not much Company. Pray, Sir, said I, how did you bring him so well under Command, as to keep with you, when he has Liberty to run away? I wonder the wild ones do not entice him from you. I had him young, replied the old Man, and made very much of him, which those Creatures dearly love: besides, when he was grown up, the wild ones would not suffer him amongst them; that he was forced to remain with me. I had another before this; but he, I may say, was sent by Providence, both to be an Help and Diversion to me; for he was so knowing, that he took a great deal of Labour off my Hands, and dispersed many anxious Hours, which the Irksomeness of my Solitude had created. 'Tis now about twelve Years since; for I keep a Memorial, which indeed I designed to have been a Journal; but I unfortunately let the regular Order of the Days slip out of my Memory; however, I observed a seventh Day, and reckoned the Years from Winter to Winter; I cannot well mistake.

One Day, when I had roasted a Quantity of Roots, which I eat instead of Bread, having spread them on my Table and Chest to cool, in order to lay them by for Use; I went out, leaving my Door open, to let the Air in.

Having walk'd an Hour or two, I return'd home, where I found a Monkey, whom the Smell of the hot Roots had brought; who, during my Absence, had been eating. My Presence very much surpris'd him, yet he still kept his Place, only discontinued eating, staring me in the Face: the unexpected Guest at once startled me, and fill'd me with Admiration; for, certainly, no Creature of its Kind could be compared to it, for Beauty. His Back was of a lively Green, his Face and Belly of a lively Yellow: his Coat, all over, shining like burnished Gold. The extraordinary Beauty of the Creature rais'd in me an ardent Desire to keep him; but I despaired of ever making him tame, being come to his full Growth: therefore having resolv'd to keep him tied, I went in and shut the Door. The Beast, which, till then, had not offer'd to make his Escape, appear'd very much disturb'd, and stared about him for some Place to get out at: perceiving his Disorder, I did not advance, but turned my Back to him; to give him time to compose himself, which he in a short Time did, as appear'd by his falling to eat again; which made me conceive Hopes that I should, in time, make him familiar. Having about me stale roasted Roots, which eat much pleasanter than the fresh, and are less stuffing, I threw some at him, at which he seem'd displeas'd, and stood still a while, staring in my Face; but my looking well pleas'd, which I believe the Animal was sensible of, made him pick them up, and fall to eating with a fresh Appetite. I was overjoy'd at his easy Composure; so reach'd him Water  
in

in a Shell, that the Want of nothing might induce him to a Retreat. I sat it down as near him as I could, without disturbing him, he came to it very orderly, and, having drank his fill, he laid it down and looked me in the Face, carelessly scratching his Backside: seeing he had done, I advanced, and took away the Shell, at which he never stirr'd.

The forward Disposition of the Beast towards perfect Familiarity, made me resolve to stay with the Remainder of the Day, no-wise questioning but my Company would, in a great Measure, advance it. So I made shift to sup upon a few Roots I had about me, and went pretty early to-bed; where I was no sooner laid, but the Creature got across the Feet thereof, and continued very quiet till the next Morning when I got up; at which Time he was also watching my Actions. I made very much of him, which he took very composedly; standing still to be stroaked. Then, indeed, I thought myself, in a Manner, secure of him, and gave him my Belly full, as I had done the Day before; but, having a pressing Occasion to go out, I went to the Door, thinking to shut him in till my Return: but he followed me so close, that I could not open without endangering his getting out; which, though he appear'd pretty tame, I did not care to venture our Acquaintance being so very new: yet, as I was obliged to go, I did run the Hazard; so opening the Door by Degrees, that, in case the Beast should offer to run, I might take the Opportunity to shut out, and keep him in; but, the Creature never offering to go any farther than I went, I trusted him to go with me, hoping that, if he went away, the kind Usage he met with would, one Day or other, make him come back again: but, to my great Surprise, as well as Satisfaction, he readily returned with me, having waited my Time; yet, as I had an Occasion

Occasion, to go out a second Time, wanting Stick<sup>s</sup> to make a Fire, for which I was obliged to go near the Place where most of his Kind resorted, I was afraid to trust him with me, lest he should be decoyed by the others; therefore, having taken up a Bundle of Cords, with which I tie up my Faggots, I watched an Opportunity to get out, and leave him behind: but the Beast was certainly apprehensive of my Design; for he always kept near the Door, looking stedfastly at my Bundle of Cords, as desirous of such another; which I not having for him, cut a Piece off mine, and gave it him: and, seeing I could not leave him behind, I ventured to let him go with me, which he did very orderly, never offering to go one Step out of the Way; tho' others, of this Kind, came to look at him as he went by.

Being come to the Place where I used to cut dry Sticks, having cut down a sufficient Quantity, I began to lay some across my Cord. The Creature, having taken Notice of it, did the same to his, and with so much Dexterity and Agility, that his Faggot was larger, and sooner made than mine; which, by that time, being large enough, and as much as he could well carry, I bound it up; which set him to do the same with his, which was abundantly too large a Load for him.

Our Faggots being made, I took up that which I had made, to see how he would go about taking up his; which, being much too heavy for him, he could not lift: so running round it, I believe, twenty times, he looked me in the Face, as craving Help. Having been sufficiently diverted with the out-of-the-way Shifts he made, I gave him mine, and took up his: the poor Animal appeared overjoyed at the Exchange; therefore cheerfully takes up the Bundle, and follows me home.

Seeing myself, according to all Probability, sure  
fo



of the dear Creature, whose late Actions gave me such Ground to hope from him both Service and Pleasure, I return'd my hearty Thanks to kind Providence for its late prodigious Gift; for certainly this was never heard of before, that, in a desert Place, one of those wild Animals, who fly at the singular Appearance of an human Creature, should voluntarily give itself to a Man, and, from the very Beginning, be so docile and tractable. O! surely it was endued with more than natural Instinct! A perfect Reason was seen in all its Actions. Indeed I was happy whilst I had him; but my Happiness alas! was not of long standing. As he spoke, I perceived Tears in his Eyes. Pray, Sir, said I, what became of that wonderful Creature? Alas! said he, he was killed by Monkeys of the other Kind, who fell upon him, one Day, as he was going for Water by himself: for the poor dear Creature had grown so knowing, that if, at any Time, either Food or Water was wanted, I had nothing to do but to give him the Bundle of Cords, or the empty Vessel, and he would straight go and fetch either: so short, he wanted nothing but Speech to compel them him for human Society. Indeed, Sir, said I, cannot blame you for bemoaning the Loss of so incomparable a Creature; the Account you give of him well entitles his Memory to regret: but I hope this you have now, in a great Measure, made up your Loss. O! not by far, replied the old Man. Indeed he goes about with me, and will carry a Faggot, or a Vessel of Water, pick a Fowl, turn the Spit or String, when Meat is a roasting; yet is nothing like my late dear *Beaufidelle*; for so I call that most lovely Creature: besides, this is unlucky in imitating me, he often does me Mischief. It was but the other Day that I had been writing five or six Hours; I had Occasion to go out, and

happened

have happened to leave my Pen and Ink upon the Table,  
 and the Parchment I had been writing on close by  
 and by: I was no sooner gone, but the mischievous Beast  
 instantly set to work, scribbling over every Word I had  
 written; and, when he had done, he lays it  
 in the Chest, as he saw me do what I had writ-  
 ten; and takes out another, which he does the  
 very same to, and so to half a Score more; my Return  
 surely prevented his doing more Mischief: however, in  
 less than a Quarter of an Hour, that I was absent, he blotted  
 out as much as I had been full six Months writing.  
 Indeed I was angry, and could have beaten him:  
 but I considered my Revenge would not have  
 repaired the Damage, but rather, perhaps, add to  
 my Loss, by making the Beast run away. Pray,  
 Sir, said I, how came you by him? Did he also  
 give himself to you? No, replied the old Man, I  
 found him young, and by mere Accident, unexpect-  
 edly and unsought for; having lost both Time and  
 Labour about getting one in the room of him I  
 had so unfortunately lost. The old ones are so  
 fond of their young, that they never are from  
 them, unless in their Play they chase one another  
 into the other Kind's Quarters, where their Dams  
 of dare not follow them: for they are such Enemies  
 to one another, that they watch all Opportunities  
 to catch all they can of the contrary Sort, which  
 they immediately strangle: which keeps their In-  
 crease very backward, that would otherwise grow  
 too numerous for the Food the Island produces;  
 which is, I believe, the Cause of their Animosity.  
 About eight Years ago, which is the Time I  
 have had this Beast, I was walking under one of the  
 Clusters of Trees where the green Sort of Mon-  
 keys harbour, which being the largest and most  
 in the Island: I took the most Delight there-  
 in, as I was walking, at a small Distance from me  
 this

this Creature dropt off a Tree, and lay for dead which, being of the grey Kind, made me wonderless at the Accident. I went, and took him up and, accidentally handling his Throat, I opened his Windpipe, which was almost squeezed close: that which took him, which my sudden coming prevented from strangling quite. I was extremely well pleased at the Event, by which I got what my past Cares and Diligence, never could produce me. Having pretty well recovered its Breath, and feeling no visible Hurt about it, I imagined that I should might recover it quite; so hastened home with it, gave it warm Milk, and laid it on my Bed: that with careful nursing, I quite recovered him, and, with good keeping, made the Rogue thrive to that Degree, that he has outgrown the rest of his Kind. No Question, Sir, said I, having taken such Pains with him, you love him as well as his Predecessor. I cannot say so, neither, replied the other Man; tho' I cannot say but that I love the Creature: but its having the ill Fortune to be of the unlucky Kind which was the Death of my dear *Beaufidelle*, in a great Measure lessens my Affection. Besides, he falls so short, both of his Merit and Beauty, that I must give the Deceased the Preference: and, was it not for his cunning Trick which often divert me, I should hardly value him at all; but he is so very cunning and facetious, that he makes me love him, notwithstanding I mortal hate his Kind. I must divert you, whilst Dinner getting ready, with an Account of some of his Tricks.

Being extremely fond of me, he very seldom would be from me, but followed me every where, and, as he used to go with me when I went to examine my Nets, seeing me now and then take a Game, he would, of his own Accord, when he saw

me busy writing, go and fetch what happened to be taken.

One Day finding a Fowl in the Net-bag, he pull'd it alive as he brought it home ; so that I could not see any Thing whereby to discern its Kind. As soon as he came in, he set it down with such Motions as expressed Joy : the poor naked Fowl was no sooner out of his Clutches, but that it took to its Legs, for want of Wings : its sudden Escape so surpris'd the Captor, that he stood amazed for a while, which gave the poor Creature time to gain a considerable Scope of Ground ; but the astonished Beast, being recovered from his Surprize, soon made after it ; but was a considerable Time before he could catch it, having nothing to lay hold of ; so that the Fowl would slip out of his Hands. The Race held about a Quarter of an Hour, in which Time the poor Creature, having run itself out of Breath, was forced to lie down before its Pursuer, who immediately threw himself upon it ; so took it up in his Arms, and brought it home, but was not so ready to set it down as before : for he held it by one Leg till I had laid hold of it.

I had a second Time as good Diversion, but after another Manner. One Morning early, whilst I was busy in my Cottage, he went out, unperceived by me ; and, having been a considerable Time absent, I feared that such another Accident had befallen him as that which happened to his Predecessor ; so I went to see after him : and as he would often go and visit the Nets in the Woods, I went there first, where I found him very busy with such an Animal as this we have here, which he found taken in one of the Gap-nets, and, being near as big as he, kept him a great while struggling for Mastership ; Sometimes he would take it by the Ears, now and then by one Leg, next by the Tail ; but could not



get him along ; at last he laid hold of one of his hind Legs, and with the other Hand smote him on the Back, in order to drive him, not being able to pull him along ; but the Beast, being too strong, still made towards the Thickset, where he certainly would have hailed the Driver, had I not come up to help him, Thus the old Gentleman entertained us with his Monkey's Tricks while Dinner was dressing.

The Dinner being ready, we went to the Dining-place to eat it, leaving the young Fellow who was with us to attend the roasted Meat, while we eat the first Dish.

The old Gentleman having laid the Cloth, which, tho' something coarse, being made out of Part of a Ship-sail, was very clean, he laid three Shells on it, about the Bigness of a middle-sized Plate, but as beautiful as any Nakes of Pearl I ever saw. Gentlemen, says he, if you can eat off these Shells, ye are welcome ; I have no better Plates to give you. Sir, said I, these are preferable to Silver ones, in my Opinion ; and I very much question whether any Prince in *Europe* can produce so curious a Service. They may be richer, replied the old Man, but not cleaner.

The first Dish he served was Soup in a large deer Shell, as fine as the first, and one Spoon made of a Shell, which he said was all his Stock, being never used to, nor expecting Company : however, he fetched a couple of Muscle Shells, which he washed very clean ; then gave *Alvarado* one, and took the other himself, obliging me to make use of the Spoon : so we sat down, *Alvarado* and I upon the Chest, which we drew near the Table ; and the old Gentleman (tho' much against his Will) upon the Chair.

Being set down, we fell to eating the Soup, whose fragrant Smell excited my Appetite; and I profess the Taste thereof was so excellent, that I never eat any comparable to it at *Pontac's*; nor any-where before: It was made of one half of the Beast we took in the Morning, with several Sorts of Herbs which eat like Artichokes, Asparagus, and Celery; there were also Bits of roasted Roots in it, instead of toasted Bread, which added much to the Richness of it, tasting like Chestnuts: But, what surprised me most, there were green Pease in it, whose extraordinary Sweetness was discernible from every other Ingredient. Pity, said I, the Access to this Island is so difficult; what a blessed Spot of Land would it make, were it but inhabited! Here naturally grows what in *Europe* we plow, till, and labour hard for. You say, replied the old Man, this would be a blessed Spot of Ground, if it was inhabited: Now I am quite of another Opinion; for I think its Blessing consists in its not being inhabited, being free of those Curses your populous and celebrated Cities abound in; here's nothing but Praises and Thanksgivings heard: And as for Nature bestowing freely, and of her own Accord, what in *Europe* you are obliged, by Industry and hard Labour, in a Manner to force from her, wonder not at: Consider how much you daily rob her of her Due, and charge her with Slander and Calumny: Don't you frequently say, if a Man is addicted to any Vice, that it is his Nature, when it is the Effect and Fruit of his Corruption? So Nature, who attended the great Origin of all Things at the Creation, is now, by vile Wretches, deemed in fault for all their Wickedness: Had Man remained in his first and natural State of Innocence, Nature would also have continued her original Indulgence over him: We may now think

ourselves very happy, if that Blessing attends Labour which before the Fall of Man flowed him, accompanied with Ease and Pleasure.

Now these Pease, which have so much raised your Surprise, are indeed the Growth of this Island, not its natural Product, but the Gifts of Providence and the Fruits of Labour and Industry. I have till'd the Ground; Providence procured the Seed; Nature gave it Growth, and Time Increase: When I sowed seven Pease and three Beans, I have, in four Years Time, raised Seed enough to stock a Piece of Ground, out of which I gather yearly, a sufficient Quantity for my Use, besides preserving fresh Store. No doubt, Sir, said I, but, when right Means are taken, Prosperity will attend. By that time, having eaten sufficiently of the Soup, he himself would carry the Remains to the young Man in the Kitchen, and fetch in the boiled Meat and Oy Sauce, which he brought in another Shell much of the same Nature with that which the Soup was served in, but something shallower, which eat was as delicious as House Lamb.

Having done with that, he fetches in the other half of the Beast roasted, and several Sorts of delicate Pickles which I never eat of before, and Mushrooms, but of a curious Colour, Flavour, and Taste. These, said he, are the natural Product of a particular Spot of Ground; where, at a certain Time of the Year, he said, he gathered, for the Space of six Days only, three Sizes of Mushrooms: though they were all Buttons, and fit to pickle; at that time he had gathered all, he had also to fetch and some about four Inches over, which he broiled; and they eat as choice as any Veal-cutlet.

These Pickles, Sir, said I, though far exceeding any I ever did eat in *Europe*, are really, at

time, needless; the Meat wanting nothing to raise its Relish; no Flesh being more delicious.

Having done with that, I offer'd to take it away, but he in no wise would permit me; so went away with it himself, and brought the Fowls, at which I was somewhat vexed; for I feared I should find no Room in my Stomach for any, having eat so heartily of the Meat; but having, at his pressing Request, tasted them, my Appetite renewed at their inexpressible Deliciousness; so I fell to eating afresh.

Having done with that Dish, the young Man, having nothing to do in the Kitchen, came and was bid to take away, and fall to: In the mean Time, the good old Man fetched us, out of his Dairy, a small Cheese of his own making, which being set down, he related to us the unaccountable Manner he came by the Antelopes which supply'd him with the Milk it was made with; which introduced several weighty Remarks on the wonderful Acts of Providence, and the Strictness of the Obligations we lie under to our great Benefactor; likewise the vast Encouragement we have to love and serve God, the Benefits and Comforts of a clear Conscience, as also the inestimable Treasure of Content: From that he epitomized the different Tempers and Dispositions of Men, much commending timely Education, as being a Means to reverse and change evil Inclinations; highly praising the Charity of those pious People, who chuse to bestow good schooling upon poor Folks Children, before Cloathing, and even Food; the first being rather the most necessary, and the last the easiest to come at.

That Discourse being ended, he inquired very carefully after the State of his dear Native Country, which, he said, he left fifty Years ago in a very indulgent Disposition. I gave him the best Account



I could at that time of all the Transactions that had happened in *England* since his Absence. The Relation of past Evils, said he, are like Pictures of Earthquakes and Shipwreck, which affect the Mind but slightly: And tho' I think myself out of any Prince's Power, yet I shall always partake with my Countrymen's Grief: Pray be explicit. What King have we now? A complete Patriot and Father to his Subjects, said I; both tender-hearted and merciful, encouraging Virtue, and suppressing Vice, a Promoter of Religion, and an Example of Charity. Then, said he, in a Manner which expressed Zeal and Joy, long may that pious Monarch live, and his blessed Posterity for ever grace the *British* Throne! And may *Old England*, by its faithful Obedience and Loyalty, henceforth atone for its past Rebellions, that it may remove that execrable Reproach it now lies under! To which we all said, *Amen*. Then he filled up the Shell we drank out of, and drank good King *George's* Health, which was succeeded with that of the Royal Family, and Prosperity to the Church. Thus ended a most delicious and splendid Dinner, and a Conversation both delightful and instructive. But, having not as then mentioned any thing about his own History, which I exceedingly longed to inquire into, I begged him to inform us by what Accident he came hither, and how he had so long maintained a good State of Health. To which he answered, Time would not permit him to relate his own History, being very long, and the Remainder of the Day too short: but that he would, before we parted, give it me in Writing; having, for want of other Occupation, made a Memorial. But as to the maintaining of his Health, he would tell me by Word of Mouth. The Receipt, said he,

is both short and easy; yet I fear you will not be able to follow it: Look you, you must use none but wholesome Exercises, observe a sober Diet, and live a pious Life: Now, if you can confine yourself to this Way of living, I'll be bound, that you will both preserve your Health, and waste less Money: But, what's more valuable than all that, you will not endanger your precious Soul. I returned him Thanks for his good Advice, and promised him I would observe it as strictly as I could. I am afraid, replied he, that will not be at all: You have too many powerful Obstacles, the World and the Flesh, from whom your Affections must be entirely withdrawn, and all Commerce prohibited, which is morally impossible whilst living: Therefore, since you are obliged to converse with the World, I will give you a few Cautions, which, if rightly taken, may be of Use to you.

*Make not the World your Enemy, nor rely too much on its Fidelity.*

*Be not too free with your Friend: Repetitions of Favours often wear out Friendship.*

*Waste not your Vigour or Substance on Women, least Weakness and Want be your Reward.*

*Secrets are not safe in a Woman's Breast; 'tis a Confinement the Sex can't bear.*

*Pass no Contract over Liquor; Wine overcomes Reason, and dulls the Understanding.*

*He who games puts his Money in Jeopardy, and is not sure of his own.*

*There's but little Honour to wager on sure Grounds, and less Wisdom to lay upon a Chance.*

And in all your Dealings take this for a constant Rule:

*He whom unlawful Means advance to Gain,  
Instead of Comfort, finds a constant Pain :  
What e'en by lawful Arts we do possess,  
Old Age and Sicknefs make it comfortlefs.  
Be rull'd by me, not to increase your Store  
By Means unjust ; for 'twill but make you poor,  
Take but your Due, and never covet more.*

I returned him Thanks for his good Morals, the Copy of which I begged he would give me in writing, for my better putting them in Practice: to which he readily consented, wishing I might observe them; and being very sure that I should reap a considerable Benefit thereby, both here and hereafter.

The Day being pretty far spent, I was obliged to think of going, which grieved me much; for I was so taken with his Company, that if I had not had a Father and Mother, whose Years required my Presence, I would have spent the rest of my Days with him. I was so delighted with his Company, and pleased with his Way of living, that I almost overlooked my Duty; but, after a Struggle with my Inclination, I was obliged to yield to Nature. Thus, having expressed by Vexation to leave for good a Man, I took my Leave. The good old Man, perceiving my regret to leave him, could not conceal his to part with me. Indeed, said he with Tears in his Eyes, I should have been very glad to have had a Fellow-creature in this solitary Island, especially one whom I think possessed of a good Inclination; which I perceive you have, by your Reluctance at leaving this innocent Garden of Life. I imagine that you have Relations in the World that may stand in need of you; Heaven protect you, and send you safe to them! I don't imagine that you will ever see this Island again; nor

would I advise you to venture, the Approach of it is so dangerous: Therefore, before you go, let me shew you some of the Rarities with which it abounds. I told him, I was afraid Time would not permit; but as he said, that about an Hour or two would do, and we had Day-light enough, I went along with him.

Going out, and seeing the Guns stand behind the Door, I asked what he did with them? I keep them, said he, for a Trophy of Providence's Victory over my Enemies, and a Monument of my fourth miraculous Deliverance. As we went along, he related to us the Manner in which he had been sacrilegiously robbed once by *Indians*; villainously invested twice by Pirates; the Russians having combined to carry him away, like a Slave, to their own Country, and there make a Shew of him, as if he had been a Monster.

Talking, we walked under several of the before-mentioned Clusters of Trees which proceed from one single Plant: Being come to one larger than the rest, and which he said he frequented most, it being the largest in the Island; this, said he, covers, with its own Branches, a whole Acre of Land; so made several Remarks on the wonderful Works of Nature; which, said he, were all intended for the Use and Pleasure of Man; every thing in the Universe containing such different Virtues and Properties as were requisite to render Life happy. From that he made several more Reflections on the fatal Effects of Disobedience, which is accounted a slight Breach in Duty, but is the Mother of all Sins.

That Discourse held for a considerable Time, till a Parcel of each different Kind of Monkeys, having met, fell to fighting, observing an admirable Order during the Fray; which withdrew our Admiration from



from the preceding Subject, and stopt us awhile observe them.

The Scuffle was very diverting whilst it lasted which was but a short Time; for they happened to perceive us, at which they parted, each Sort running to their own Quarters, which were not very distant from one another, so that from it they could see each other's Motions. I am sorry, said I, the Battle was so soon over; they cuffed one another so prettily, that I could have stood an Hour to see them. If you like the Sport, said the old Man, I can soon set them at it again. With that he takes out of his Breeches Pocket some roasted Roots, which he commonly carried about him, to throw at them when he went that way which made them less shy of him.

Having broke the Roots in Bits, he lay them down in their Sight; for they on both Sides were peeping from under the Leaves of the Trees where they harboured: Then he cuts a Score of Sticks about the Bigness of one's Finger, and near a Foot and an half long, and lay them over the Bits of Roots: Then we retired to some small Distance and hid ourselves behind the Trees.

We were no sooner out of Sight but that they hastened to the Meat; the green Monkeys, having less Ground to go, were at them first; yet never stopt, but went on to hinder the others Approach who vigorously strove to gain Ground. The Struggle was hard, and the Victory often wavering: each Party alternately gave way: At last the grey Sort kept the Advantage, and drove their Adversaries back, who being come where the Sticks lay immediately took them up, and charged their Enemies with a fresh Courage, like a yielding Army that has received new Forces: Thus, with their Clubsters in the Front, they fell on their Adversaries

erfaries with great Vigour, knocking them down like our *English* Mob at an Election; so drove them back again almost to their own Quarters.

In the mean time Stragglers of both the Kinds, who had not joined with the main Bodies of the Armies, seeing the Coasts clear, and the Provisions unguarded, unanimously fell to plunder, and quietly did eat what their Comrades fought for; which the Combatants perceiving, left off fighting, and of one accord turned upon the Plunderers, who, by that time having devoured the Booty, left them the Field without contending any farther.

The Battle being over, the old Gentleman would have us to go on, least, said he, they should fall to it again out of Revenge; for those Creatures are very spiteful.

Having dispersed them by our advancing, as intended, we walked from under the Trees at the Outside, to have a better View of the Rock, which in some Places, he said, changes its Form as one approaches it: And, as he said, being got clear of the Trees, we saw at a Distance, as it were, a considerable Number of Buildings, and here-and-there something like Steeples, which represented an handsome City; and seemingly the Houses appeared so plain, that, had I not been apprized of the Illusion, I should have taken it for such; but *Alvando* and the young Fellow, could not be persuaded but what we saw were really Buildings, and even in the Island, though the old Gentleman made us stop a while, the better to observe every thing; then bid us keep our Eyes fixed at what we looked at, and go on: We perceived every particular of what we observed to change its Form; that which at first seemed to be fronting, shewed itself either sideways or backwards; and so of every

Object, till, being come at a certain Distance, all the Agreeableness of the Perspective, of a sudden turned into its real Shape like a Phantom ; which, whilst visible, screens that which it stands before ; but, by its vanishing, leaves it discovered.

Being come as near the Rock as the Lake that parts it would permit, we could discern nothing in it that could in the least soften its Ruggedness, or give it a more agreeable Aspect, than those which are represented in the Pictures of Shipwrecks.

The old Gentleman, thereupon, made several learned Observations on the Alterations that Distance works upon Objects, and shewed how easily our Organs of Sight may be deceived ; drawing from thence this Inference, That we ought not to be too positive of the Reality of what we see afar off, nor to affirm for Truth that which we only heard of.

Having ended that Discourse, he carried us to the other Side of the jetting Part of the Rock, which, advancing like a Bastion of a fortified Wall, screen'd from our Eyes a second Piece of Wonder ; a fine Rainbow, issuing, as it were, out of the Mouth of a Giant, lying on a Rock, reaching quite over the Lake : At the Bottom of it I could not but stop to admire the various Colours it consisted of, which far exceeding, in Beauty and Liveliness, any I ever saw in the Sky, I presently imagined that it proceeded from the Rays of the Sun falling upon some Pond, or other standing Water, whose Reflections rose, and met the Tops ; which caused that beautiful Circle. But *Alvarado*, who, by what he had seen before, concluded that the Island was enchanted, said, it was another Illusion, which the Place was full of ; and would have gone away, but that the old Man fell a laughing, and said, 'Tis a Sign you seldom inquire into natural Causes : Well, do but come a little nearer to it, and you will find that

which

which you term an Illusion, is the natural Effect of all Fountains when the Sun shines.

Being come to the Place it proceeded from, it proved, as he said, only a Fountain, but of the clearest and sweetest Water that ever was tasted ; but the Place it issued out of was changed from the Likeness of a Giant to that of some strange sort of Creature ; which, tho' having no particular Resemblance, yet would bear being compared to several different Things. The old Man's Opinion was, that it resembled a Whale spirting Water out at one Nostril. *Alvarado* supposed it was more like an Horse or a Cow ; and rather the last, there being Horns plain to be seen. For my part, I could find no proper Similitude to it, but that of an old ruin'd Monument, which formerly they built over the Heads of Springs. *Timothy Anchors* (for that was the Name of the young Fellow that was with us) being asked, what he could make of it ? Why really, said he, nothing, unless it be an old patched-up Pump that stands at the End of my Mother's Court in *Rosemary-lane* (which every Spring runs out of itself) ; which Comparison made us all to laugh.

Thus we differed in our Opinions as to the Likeness, yet agreed, that was the finest Fountain, and the best Water, we ever saw or drank. What surprized me most, was, the Force wherewith it sprung from the Rock that stood full five Yards from the Place it fell on, which was another Subject of Admiration ; for certainly the Arts of Men could not have invented nor compleated a more compact or pleasanter Basen, tho' it had been for a Fountain to adorn a Monarch's Garden : Indeed there were no Masons, nor any expert Artists exquisite Works to be seen, but a great deal of Nature's matchless Understanding : There Regularity, Dimension, and Proportion, concerted to make it useful, convenient, and agreeable.

The



The *Basin* was very near round, about eight Feet Diameter, a Bank around it near a Foot high and as broad at Top, flanting gently at the Bottom both inside and outside, which made a most pleasant and uniform Bank, adorned with various fine Flowers and Herbs of divers beautiful Colours, and most fragrant Smells.

Having viewed with Pleasure and Amazement such Regularity in a wild and uninhabited Place I walked about it as long as the Time I could stay would permit: I proposed going, but the old Gentleman, taking me by the Hand, stopt me: You have, said he, bestowed a considerable Time in observing the Fertility of this Island; now pray allow me one Minute for Consideration: The Object you have been admiring all this time is as wonderful and surprizing, as beautiful and pleasant: You see the Fountain, which runs stiff, and as large as your Thumb, and therefore by Computation may be allowed to give near a hundred Gallons of Water in an Hour: Now it runs Night and Day; it neither decreases, nor runs over its Bank, but keeps to the same Height. This, as you say, Sir, said I, is really worth inquiring into: So I went several times round it, searching for the Place, where the Overplus of the Complement did issue; but could not discover it. Come, said he, seek no more for that which Nature has so well concealed. I have spent many Hours in that Inquiry, and still remain ignorant; but have found the Place out of which it runs into a fine Fish-pond, about a Mile inland; we will make it in our Way to the Lake, we may look at it as we go by, but can make no long stay. So we went on.

Going along, we came by an hollow Part of the Rock, which went in like an Alcove, with a great many Concavities in it in Rows one above another

as round Niches where Figures stand. Now, said the old Man, we are here, I will entertain you with an invisible Chorus of harmonious Voices, little inferior to Hautboys, Trumpets, or other melodious Music: Here I twice come and pay my Devotions each Day. *Alvarado*, who, by what he had already seen, was prepossessed that the Island was full of Inchantments, was now certain of it; and looked upon that Place in the Rock to be the Receptacle of Fiends, and evil Spirits; so would by no means stay; but takes his leave, saying, he was not very curious of supernatural Things. Supernatural, said the old Man, you can't well call it, though to you it may be very amazing: It is therefore well deserving your Sight; I mean your Hearing; the Eyes having no Share in the Entertainment: We shall only sing a few Psalms; I am sure there can be no harm in that, but rather good, being an holy Exercise in divine Worship, in which all good Souls ought to join. That may be, said *Alvarado*; but I love to see those with whom I worshipped: I don't think myself as yet Company for Spirits. As for your part, said *Alvarado*, (speaking to me) you may do what you please; but take care your Curiosity don't cost you too dear. *Tim* and I will wait for you in the Boat; but pray be not too long before you come. So, having returned the old Gentleman Thanks for his kind Entertainment, they went away; at which the good Man was much affronted. What, said he, do your Friends imagine I deal with Spirits? Besides, where did they ever hear, that Devils lov'd to sing Psalms? for here shall nothing else be sung: I would not for the World, that those admirable Echoes, that hitherto have repeated nothing but the Almighty's Praises, should be polluted with the Sound of any profane Words. I endeavoured to excuse their Timorousness, saying,

it

it was not a Failing peculiar to themselves only, but to many besides. The old Man allowed it, attributing the Cause thereof to a very pernicious Custom Nurses have to frighten Children when they cry, with Buggabos, and such things, to make them quiet; which frightful Ideas often make such a deep Impression on their puerile Minds, that, when they come to mature Age, it is hardly worn out, which intimidates many.

That Discourse being ended, we advanced near that Part of the Rock as the Lake would permit, which in that Place was not above seven or eight Feet broad; so that we were within the Cavity of the Rock. Now, said the old Man, let us sit down on this Bank, and sing the hundred and seventeenth Psalm. Indeed, Sir, said I, I don't know it by Heart, and I have no Psalm-book about me. Well then, said he, I'll sing myself; so he begins; but with such a clear and loud Voice, managed with so much Skill and Judgment, that it exceeded all the Singing I ever heard before; and was repeated by such a Number of melodious Echoes, that one would have believed there were hundred Voices in Chorus.

The Melody so transported me, that I willingly would have spent not only the Remainder of the Day, but the succeeding also; the Ecstasy having quite put out of my Mind the Necessity of my going, and the Danger of delaying: But the good Man having sung an Evening Hymn after the Psalm, which he said he sung every Night, he took me by the Hand: Now, said he, is not this Emulation? Who would not sing with such a Chorus of Choristers as you might imagine was there? Indeed, Sir, said I, this has so great Resemblance to the Relation we have given us in holy History of the superior Joys the Blessed possess in Heaven, that I thought

only, I thought myself already there ; for which Reason I would willingly end my Days here. This is impossible, said the old Gentleman ; nor can you spend here many more Moments : I have the Fish-pond to shew you yet ; come let's go. So we went on about fifty Paces from thence more inland : We saw at a small Distance, between the Trees, a Parcel of Fowls like Ducks, but considerably larger, which flew away from the Pond, at our Approach towards them. He told me how he came by the old one that bred them, of which he was robbed. At length being come to the Pond, I was surprized at the Clearness of the Water, at the Bottom of which seemed to be large Rubies, Emeralds, Iacims, and other coloured Stones ; till, being come to the Brink of it, those which I took for precious Stones, proved to be Fishes by their swimming about, which, to my thinking, looked like Stars shooting from Place to Place in the Sky. Having spent several Minutes in admiring the surprising Nature and Beauty of the Fishes, I took Notice of the Pond, which was about forty Yards in length, and near thirty in breadth : Its Form was a broken Oval, sinking in and out here-and-there, which made it the more agreeable : All round it grew diverse Sorts of Herbs intermixed with Flowers of different Colours, and here-and-there a Basket on Sticks, which the old Man told me he made and set there for his Ducks to breed in. The Day being far spent, the old Man, after having shewed me the Places at one Side of the Pond wherein the Basins emptied itself, as also the other Side whereby the Pond ran into the Lake, takes me by the Hand : Come, said he, I will keep you no longer ; Night comes on apace, and the Retreat from this Island is dangerous ; therefore I would have you improve the short Remains of the Day, to avoid the Dangers



gers the Darkness of the Night may lead you in  
So let us go home, that I may give you the Memorial I have promised you, and then my Blessing and hearty Prayers for your safe Departure, and happy Arrival. So we went to his Habitation where he gave me a Roll of Parchment.

Here it is, said he, in a rough and unpolite Language; for I did not write it out of Ostentation, to exert my Parts, but to keep me in mind of the many Mercies I have received from Heaven ever since my Youth, and to record the wonderful Effects of Providence; that if ever these Writings should have the Luck to fall into the Hands of Men after my Decease, they might be an Encouragement to the destitute, and a Comfort to the afflicted, that he who rightly applies himself, and firmly trusts in the Almighty, shall, at his Extremity, find Relief: And now my Intent is in some measure answered, expecting you will revise and publish it when you come to *Old England*. I now enjoin you not to give it out as my own Dictation, but an History taken from Heads out of my Memorial; for I have been obliged to insert Particulars, and use such Expressions, without which the Account I give of myself would have been imperfect; and which, being related as by me, might chance to be accounted Self-flattery, which is a Censure I would willingly avoid. I told him I might depend upon it, I should always, and on all Accounts, be very tender of any thing that could in the least lessen the Merit of the Subject, or tarnish the Lustre of the History.

With that the good Man takes me in his open Arms, and embraces me over and over with all the Tenderness Words and Actions could express, saying, with Tears in his Eyes, that my Exit was a renewing of his past Grief, and would for a considerable

derable Time damp the Pleasures he before my coming did enjoy in his Solitude ; since now he again has had the Comfort to converse with one of his dear Countrymen, after full fifty Years being severed from human Society. The Height of his Grief having for some Moments stopt the Utterance of his Words, he sighing laid his Head upon my Neck, squeezing me close in his Arms.

This most tender and moving Action moved me to a reciprocal Grief : Never did any Man reflect with more Reluctancy than when I parted with that good old Man, who having recovered in some measure his former Firmness of Mind, his Soul being again resign'd, we repeated our Embraces with a mutual Affection. Then I took my Leave ; but he would not part with me there ; he would by all means wait on me to the Lake I was to wade over to come at the Rock, on the other Side of which the Boat waited for me : And when I came thither, he would also have waded over with me, that he might have the Satisfaction of seeing me safe from the dangerous Rock ; but I would in no wise permit him. Thus having prevailed upon him to stay behind, I prepared to wade over : So after a few more Embraces, I cross'd the Lake, and came to my impatient Companions, who received me with heavy Reprimands for trusting myself so long alone with that Necromancer ; for nothing, say they, shall ever persuade me a Man can have such Plenty of Dainties with only the Help of Nature. No, no, he may talk of Providence as much as he pleases ; he applies to the Black Art ; and those Voices he calls Echoes are his invisible Imps, which (if Truth be known) are often employ'd in raising the Wind, and causing Storms, which render these Seas often so dangerous : And it has been observed, that few or no Ships come near those Rocks,

Rocks, and escape being stav'd. For my Part, assure you I don't think myself safe, whilst within the Reach of his Enchantments. With that he took one of the Oars out of young *Tim*'s Hand, and set to rowing. Indeed, said *Tim*, as you say, he looks very much like a Conjuror with his long Hair and Beard; and I believe he is conjuring now. So here is bad Weather coming; let us make haste from these Rocks.

Even as he said, in short, so it happened; for in a little Time after the Wind rose, and the Sea began to be a little rough; so that I was forced to take a Hatcher, and with it keep the Boat from the Rocks, whither the Waves very often drove us; but, starting out to Sea, the Wind grew more calm, and favourable for the Continent: I took one of the Oars, and, with the help of our Sail, in a short Time we got safely to Shore; where being arriv'd very much fatigued, we put up at the first Cottage, which was inhabited by an old Man and Woman, *Indians*, where we dressed our Fish, and went to Supper; which was scarce over, but I was hurried on board, the Wind being tack'd about, and fair for our Departure.

We weigh'd Anchor on the seventeenth Day of *May*, 1724, and stood out to Sea, and sailed South and by East till we arrived on the 26th at *Panama* on *Terra Firma*, after meeting with some stormy Weather. Here we began to traffick, in our Way home, for some Corn, necessary for our following Voyage; as also Cotton, some Metals, *Rosin*, Gums, and Pepper. Our Stay was not long here, for we sailed from thence on the fifth of *June*, the Wind being then very favourable: But we had not sailed above twenty Leagues, when we met with a violent Storm, which lasted some Hours, and the Wind blowing hard at North North-east; where we had the Misfortune to lose our Surgeon, on

*John Davis*, who, being imprudently upon Deck, was wash'd overboard by a prodigious Wave coming in at the Forecastle: Our Ship received no Damage in that Storm; but our Loss of Mr. *Davis* was very great, and worse than if any other Man on board had been missing; for we might also call him our Chaplain, as well as Surgeon: And by his exemplary, pious Life, during the Time he belong'd to our Ship, he might really be called a Divice. He was a Man, who, as he told me, had been educated at *Hart-Hall, Oxon*, in his early Days, and designed for the sacred Robe: But his Genius very much inclining to those most pleasant Studies, *viz.* Physick and Surgery, he afterwards made them his Practice; but meeting with some Misfortunes, about the 35th Year of his Life, he left *England* in the Year 1711, and embark'd on board the *John and Mary* for *New England*, where he lived till the Year 1723, when our Ship arrived at that Country, at that Time wanting a Surgeon; for our own died just at our Approach near the Continent. Our Captain, on Inquiry, having an excellent Character of Mr. *Davis*, agreed with him for our Voyage till we return'd back thither again. I think it but just to eternize his Memory in these Memoirs, and give him the Character which he merited.

He was a pious good Man, sober, just, and virtuous; ready to serve, but never to offend any Man. His Morals were instructive to all those who knew him, and his constant Exhortation (while on board our Ship) to frequent daily Prayers, was the Reason that we esteemed him the Doctor of our Souls, as well as a Surgeon to our Bodies. Nay, which is still more, while he was with us, tho' he never enter'd into sacred Orders, yet he told us, he thought it his Duty to give us the best Instructions he was capable of, for the Preservation of our Souls  
and



and Bodies, both which were always in Danger. And accordingly, after divine Service (as I may say it) was perform'd by him in a very solemn Manner, he would frequently discourse on the Nature and Heinousness of the Sin of Man, which occasioned the Sufferings of Christ; on the Terrors of Hell and the Joys of Heaven; as also on the glory of the Creation of the World, setting forth the Works of Omnipotence in very lively Colours, telling of the Advantage, Pleasure, and Beauty, that attend a godly Life. Sometimes his Discourses would be of Natural Philosophy, which were extremely well deliver'd: At other times on some of the Sciences, most of which he well understood, and to which we gave very great Attention, as being desirous of such useful Knowledge: In short, his Death was greatly lamented by the Captain as well as myself, and indeed by all the Ship's Crew; for he was a Man of a quick Thought, and lively Apprehension, had an universal Knowledge in Things, intirely free from Reservedness, but of perfect Humility and Condescension; most agreeably entertaining in Conversation, and dear to all that ever knew him.

Thus, having given an imperfect Character of that great Man, to whose Memory I owe so much, I shall proceed to a further Description of our Voyage. As to the Coasts on those Seas, I think needless to make any Mention thereof, they have been so well described already by our modern Geographers, nor is it any-wise useful to my Purpose, so that I shall intirely omit it, and only give an Account of the Places where we traded or touch'd at for fresh Provision or Necessaries, and remark what happened most worthy our Notice in our Voyage home to *England*.

The Weather now proving more favourable, began to peruse the Memorials of my good

Hermit : But oh ! with what moving Sympathy  
 did I share with him in the Multitude of his Mis-  
 fortunes during his minor Years ! Nor could I less  
 sympathise with him in the Ecstasies of his herme-  
 tical Life. I read with Pleasure and Amazement  
 what he had laboriously transcribed, being at that  
 Time doubtful whether it would ever be perused  
 by any Mortal ; where he set forth a continued Se-  
 ries of Misfortunes, as if link'd together by Di-  
 vine Providence (whilst he lived in the wise World,  
 as he called it) : And in this Account, during his  
 Abode on that desolate Island, denotes that the om-  
 nipotent Being had always an immediate Direction  
 to every Circumstance or Point of Time. I was  
 more and more astonish'd and amaz'd by this good  
 Man's Precepts, who has abandon'd the World,  
 content to live in a desolate and lonesome Island,  
 uninhabited by any Mortal but himself ; where he  
 has had the Space of fifty Years to reflect and con-  
 template on the Follies and Misfortunes of Man ;  
 during which Time his Maxims were always his  
 Rule of Life in every Case. O ! may I once more  
 see that dear old Man, whose Habitation is free  
 from all anxious Cares, from Oppression and Usu-  
 ry, and all the Evils that attend this populous  
 World ! There would I abide, and never depart  
 from that happy Solitude, which he so peaceably  
 enjoys—But whither am I running ? These Con-  
 templations have made me forget the Remarks of  
 my Voyage.

We sailed from *Panama* on the 6th Day of *June*,  
 and had frequent Thunder and Lightning, attended  
 with some Rain ; but nothing else extraordinary  
 happened. On the 15th we made *Gorgona Bay* in  
*Peru*, where our Boat went on Shore to a Village  
 on the Main, with twenty Hands well arm'd, re-  
 solving to get some fresh Provisions at any Rate ;  
 for

for we began to be in want, having taken in very little at *Panama*. It is a low Land, full of Mangrove Trees, and, within Land, pretty high. The Village was but poor; however, they brought away six Hogs and four Goats; some Limes, Plantains. Not far from thence are some Gold Mines, but of no great Note, as we were informed by some *Indians*. They are a very warlike People who live on that Coast, and often engage one another with Clubs and Darts, made of hard Wood. The Island is about six Leagues in length. There are Monkeys, Lizards, Hares, and Guinea Pigs; also several Sorts of Snakes, some of which are as big as one's Leg; so that it is dangerous to walk in some Parts of the Island. One of our Men happened to be bit by one, and did not survive above six Hours after; though his Death had been prevented, I believe, had we not met with this Misfortune of losing Mr. *Davis*, our Surgeon. We also, we caught some Mulletts, and several Sorts of Fish, extremely good, though unknown to us by their Names. In this Island there is a Creature which the *Indians* call a *Mundago*, but the *Spaniards* call it a *Coati*, which I think is its properest Name; for it is a Creature which seems to sleep as it walks, by its slow Motion: And it is reported, that it eats the Leaves of Trees, which are its only Food; but is so prodigiously lazy, that when it has cleared one Tree of its Leaves, it will be almost starv'd to Death before it attempts to climb another: In short, it is a very ugly Creature, and seems to be of the Monkey-kind by its make; but its Hair is thicker and longer, nor is it so agreeable to look at, and is different in its Nature. Here we also got fresh Water, and Wood; for there are very good Brooks on this Island, and Wood enough. While we lay near this Island, I went ashore; and, in my Conversation

with a *Spaniard*, he related to me the following Account of one *Thomas Jenkins*, a *Lancashire* Man, who was Boatswain on board a Merchant's Ship, whose Name I have since forgot, who was left on that Island, and lived alone there two Years and three Months; but was first seen on that Island by some *Indians* who came from the Main for Oysters, and other Shell-fish, which they frequently gather for the *Spaniards*. He made his Escape from them, and hid himself in the Woods; fearing that they would carry him to the *Spaniards*; and, by that means, he might be made a Slave; chusing rather solitude, than to enter into Bondage for his Life. However, an *English* Ship trading on that Coast, had Notice of it from the *Indians*; and, imagining that he might be an *Englishman* cast away, or set on shore there (as he really was) by some Pirate who had been in those Seas, they sent their Boat with six Hands, to the Island, in search of him. They took their Speaking-Trumpet with them, and, by that means, after about six Hours stay on the Island, they found him out. He told them, that, at his first being set on Shore upon the Island, it seemed very melancholy, and frightful; when he begun to reflect on the Barbarity of the Pirates, to leave him here without Provisions, or any manner of Necessaries whereby he might support himself (they leaving him only his wearing Cloaths, and his Pocket-knife.) If they had left him any Fire-Arms and ammunition, his Case would not have been near so desperate; because he then might have not only defended himself against any Enemy, but likewise have kill'd some Goats, or Fowls, for his Subsistence). He also said, that what made him very melancholy, was, to think his Habitation, and Place of Abode, where he could have no human Society, and an Island that he, at first, knew not whether

D

there



there was any thing on it for his Subsistence, never being on that Coast before. But the second Day of his being there, he took a Survey of the Island, and found, that there were Monks Goats, &c. and also good Fish. He dreaded greatly the Snakes, which were larger than he had ever seen before; however, as they endeavoured to get from him, he rested pretty well satisfied; hoping there was no Beast of Prey to molest him there; for fear of which, at first, he climbed up into a Pimento-Tree to sleep. He was pleased to find such good Shell-fish, which was only Food he liv'd on for the first five Days; when by Accident, he caught a young Kid, which much rejoiced him: But he was at a great Loss how to dress it; till, having nothing to employ himself with, but thinking he remember'd that he had heard, that the rubbing of two Pieces of Wood hard together produced Fire, he tried the Experiment: And, by rubbing two Pieces of Pimento-Wood together, did produce Fire (after the Manner the *Indians* make use of it.) He then made a Fire, as having Wood enough, and broiled Part of his Goat, which was a delicious Meal to him. He afterwards began to build himself a Hut to dwell in, where he liv'd, and dress'd his Fish and Goat Flesh; but could at first only broil it, till he had driven two Stakes in the Ground, where he roasted it, with a wooden Spit. As to fresh Water, as he observed before, there were very good Brooks in the Valleys. At length he invented a Way, by Traps, to ensnare a Goat sometimes, which furnished him with Flesh. Here were Cabbage-Trees, which furnished him with Sauce to his Meat, it being very agreeable, when seasoned with the Fruit of the Pimento-Tree, which is much like *Jamaica Pepper*: But afterwards he could run a Goat down

Sometimes he had the good Luck to find some Eggs; for there were very good Fowls: He caught some young Teal also; and, by cutting their Wings, and keeping them always cut, he preserved them in a Brook, just by his Hut, which he had inclosed. There they bred, and were tame. But being one Day gone a pretty Distance from his Hut, a great Number of Monkeys finding them out, and that they could not fly away, destroy'd them all. His Cloaths were almost worn out, nay, his Shoes were quite gone, and had been for some Time; but, to preserve his Feet, he cut the Goat-Skins in the Shape of Stockings, and sewed them, or laced them up with Thongs of the same; and also laced the Foot-part, making Holes with his Knife for the Thongs, three or four times doubled together, to serve for Soals. The *Spaniards* told me, that he was so well inured to that Way of Life, when he was taken from the Island, that it was a considerable Time before he could relish either Drink, or any Kind of Victuals, which was dressed on board the Ship. I gave the *Spaniard* an Account of the Hermit, to which he gave very great Attention.

So, having refreshed ourselves, we sailed from hence, after a Stay of three Days, only in the Bay; having got a pretty many Goats from the Island, and some Maize, or *Indian Corn*. From thence we steer'd for the *Gallapago* Islands, but, in our Passage, met with several Storms and Tornadoes, attended with very great Rains. Some of our Men began to be very sickly, which we thought proceeded from their eating the Livers of some young Seals they had caught, they being unhealthy. After about three Days Sail, we met with frequent Calms. During this Voyage, one of our Negro Women, of which we had three on board, being with Child, and near her Time, was deliver'd of

a fine Boy, which was of a swarthy Colour. had been on board us ever since we came from *Brazils*, and proved very useful in washing our Men, &c. but *Juno*, for that was her Name, produced with Child by one of our Men, whose Name was *Thomas Higgins*: I, with the Help of other two Negro Women which were on board, performed the Office of a Midwife, and delivered her. I had purchased a little Wine at *Panama*, which proved very useful to mull for *Juno*, to comfort her in that Condition; also the other Negro Women, *Tom Higgins*, and I, drank one Bottle after her Delivery; and we were really merry that Occasion. The Captain was somewhat displeased at this Accident; but being unwilling to prolong a Voyage, attended with so many Difficulties as we had met with) to inflict too heavy Punishments on his Men, he only obliged *Tom* to agree that he should allow *Juno* two Pistoles, when she went ashore at *Brazil*, to take care of the Child. *Tom* readily agreed thereto, but had some Remorse of Conscience, and began to reflect; and was very much concerned to think, that the Child begot by him (tho' on a Negro, yet she was a Woman and the Child in Likeness of himself, and firmly believing that it was really begot by him, and not by other Person) should be bred up in *Paganism*. Accordingly, he grew very dull and melancholy at his Thoughts thereof, which he communicated to me, asking my Advice about it. So I persuaded him to be merry, and not cast himself down; for that many such Accidents had happened in the *West Indies* before then, among the *Englishmen*, who never thought much of it afterwards. However, this had no Effect at all on him. He told me, that whatever Crimes other People had been guilty of, he could not reconcile himself thereunto. Fine

blour. I am so very uneasy, I acquainted the Captain of  
 re from Ah ! says he, is *Tom* under so great a Concern  
 ng our about the Child's being not to be educated in the  
 ame, p Christian Religion ? Yes, Sir, said I ; and I am ap-  
 hose N prehensive that it will grow upon him very much  
 Help of o but Prejudice, he is so extreemly concerned a-  
 e on bo out it : For less Things than that, I have known  
 d deliv People grow melancholy (as he seems to be) ; and  
 at Pan they have entered into a State of Lunacy, and ne-  
 no, to c ver could be brought to their former Reason, but  
 her Ne have laid violent Hands on themselves. As he is  
 one Bo very honest, good-natured Fellow (setting aside  
 y merry his Ship) said I, I wish some Expedient could be  
 newhat found out to make him easy. Well, then, Mr.  
 illing (Darrington, says the Captain, we have the Com-  
 Difficul mon-Prayer-Book on board ; and 'tis a Pity we  
 vy Pun ost poor *John Davis*, our Surgeon and Chaplain :  
 m to ag He could have christen'd the Child, and that would  
 when have satisfied *Tom*. O, Sir, said I, with your Leave,  
 the Ch as we have no Chaplain belonging to the Ship, now  
 ne Rem Mr. *Davis* is dead ; yet, as we are tolerated to  
 l was re bury our Dead, pray why may not we christen the  
 e Child Living, also ? It can be no Crime to do a good  
 a Wom Action. The Captain approved of what I said ; so  
 and fir told him, with his Leave, I would be Chaplain,  
 m, and in that Case, as well as I had been Man-midwife  
 nism. before : But, Sir, said I, there is an Obstacle that  
 choly at will hinder us still. He ask'd me what that was ?  
 ated to Why, Sir, said I, we have neither Godfathers nor  
 aded him Godmothers ; and you know that is not accounted  
 r that m lawful to perform that Ceremony, which is one of  
 West Ind he Sacraments, unless it be done with Order and  
 who ne Decency, as the Church directs. To which the Cap-  
 er, this tain reply'd, Is there not Mr. *Clark*, our Lieute-  
 that w ant ? I and he will stand Godfathers ; and he  
 ily of shall, as he is *Clark* by Name, perform the Office  
 Fine of Clerk in the Ceremony. But, Sir, said I, what



must we do for a Godmother? You know  
ought to be one, and we have no Woman on board  
that is a Christian. Well, then, said the Captain  
the Women we have on board, by a little Persuasion,  
may be willing to be christened themselves,  
and, if they consent, they are of Age, and therefore  
capable of answering for themselves, by which means  
they may become Godmothers, on Occasion, to  
Child. So, accordingly, the Captain called for a  
Bottle of Wine, and sent for *Diana*, one of the  
Negro Women, aged about twenty-three Years.  
When she came into the Cabin, the Captain filled  
a Glass of Wine, and gave it her: After she  
drank it, the Captain said, so, *Diana*, 'tis to  
hoped that you won't be troubled with the  
Worms, and play the Trick your Sister *Juno* did. Pray  
how does the Child do? To which she answered  
it be ver well, but it cry, cry, ver much, great deal.  
Well, says the Captain; but, *Diana*, I sent for you  
on another Occasion: Do you not remember  
*Davis*, our Surgeon and Chaplain? Yes, says she,  
me ver well know him; he give me ver gret good  
Stuff (meaning a Dram): But, says the Captain,  
you know, *Diana*, he was a very good Man, and  
used to tell you your Duty, and teach you how  
to say your Prayers. Yes, says she, me ver well  
remember dat he be ver goot Man. Why, then, says  
the Captain, *Diana*, what do you think of being  
made a Christian, and christen'd as we Christians  
are? Me mak Christian (says she) how? Well, says  
the Captain, you know Mr. *Davis* taught you  
to read, and you learned to say your Prayers.  
They are very good Prayers, are they not? to  
God. Yes, says she; they be ver goot Prayers,  
me love dem ver gret much. Well, then, says the  
Captain, are you willing to be good, and do  
those Prayers learn you to do? Yes, said she,

be always ver goot, me be ver glad, me lern me Prayer, me lein more, me tank you. So, by the Captain's Advice, I read the publick Baptism of those of riper Years, and baptised her; she answering to the Questions by the Instruction of the Captain; and we christened her by the Name of *Elizabeth*, which was the Name of our Ship. As soon as the Ceremony was over, the Captain ordered *Elizabeth* to dress the Child in as decent a Manner as she could, and bring it to his Cabin: In the mean time we drank the Bottle of Wine. As soon as the Child was drels'd, *Elizabeth* carried it to the Captain, who sent for *Thomas Higgins*, and told him that *Diana* was christen'd, and that he himself, and the Lieutenant, were to stand Godfathers to his Son, and *Elizabeth* Godmother; and that it was to be christened; and desired to know what Name should be given to the Child: To which he answered, his own, viz. *Thomas*. But I never saw such an Alteration in any Man in my Life, as I immediately observed in him. So suddenly it appeared, that it surpriz'd us all. For he, who before was dejected, even to the greatest Degree imaginable, now appeared fully satisfied in his Mind; and Conscience no longer seem'd to fly in his Face; but he became full of Mirth and Jollity. So, by the Captain's Order, I christen'd the Child in a very decent Manner; the Captain and Lieutenant stood Godfathers, and *Elizabeth* stood Godmother. When the Ceremony was over, the Captain said, *Tom*, as this Child was begot and born on board my Ship, and I am its Godfather; and as it is now a Christian; I think it properly belongs to me (though I am not the Father of it) to see it brought up in a Christian Manner, which, if it please God to bless me with Life, I will see performed; and not only that, but will take care of it, if it lives, during my

Life, and see it well educated. So the Captain ordered half a Goat to be roasted ; and he, the Lieutenant, and I, with *Tom* and *Elizabeth*, whom he permitted on that Occasion, supp'd at his Table, and were very merry : Which so rejoiced *Elizabeth*, that she, immediately after Supper, related what had happen'd to her fellow Negro Woman who was called *Antiope* : and they both went to *June*, and told her, that her Son was baptized by the Name of *Thomas*.

The Weather here was extremely hot in the Day-time ; but there were cold Dews at Night, which were very dangerous ; for three of our Men died in our Voyage to the *Galliapagoes*.

As we sailed, on the twenty-fifth at Night, the Sea very much surprized us, it seeming to be as red as Blood ; which occasioned *Stephen Jones*, who was upon the Watch, with some others, to call us up, for they had never seen the like before. When we came upon Deck, we supposed it to be a great Quantity of the Spawn of Fish swimming on the Water ; it being very fair. Having passed the Line, we made the *Galliapagoes* on the fifth of *July*, where we anchored about a Mile off the Shore, in a good, smooth, sandy Ground. We sent our Boat ashore for Water, but could find none. Some of our Men began to be sick, but none of them died before we arrived at *Puna Isle*, in *Peru* ; from whence we sailed a little Way up the River *Guiaquil*, where we saw a great many Alligators, and sold some of our Goods : But the *Spaniards* being jealous that we came as Spies, and belong'd to some other Ships on that Coast, which were *Buccanniers*, we thought it best to leave that Place, having taken in some fresh Water, and a few Provisions, to serve us to the Isle of *Labos*. We stood out to Sea, and made the Island of *St. Clara*, where we anchor'd on

the tenth for that Night (our Ship proving crank, and sailing very heavy) : The next Morning, when we were preparing to sail, we found that our Ship had sprung a Leak ; so that we were obliged to have one Hand at the Pump continually. Before we had sailed six Leagues, the Wind freshen'd upon us, and the Sky look'd extraordinary black at North-east, and it moved towards us, which made us take in our Topsails ; and afterwards we reev'd our Mainsail, and Mizzen ; at which Time it began to rain, and pour'd down, as if thro' a Sieve. The Sea seem'd as if it had been all on Fire, by the prodigious Thunder and Lightning. It then being Night, the Elements over Head look'd most dismally black, but all round the Horizon was as red as Blood : The Waves, which seemed to dash against the Clouds, by the Violence of the Wind, sparkled like Lightning, which, together with the Thunder, made a terrible Noise ; at last breaking in upon our Deck, it carried away one of our Anchors ; and we durst not bring our Ship to the Wind, for fear of her foundering ; it being dangerous, in a Storm, to turn a Ship backward and forward ; so we were obliged to lie in the Trough of the Sea. But the Wind and Rain abating, we observed, to our great Joy, a *Corpus Sanct* at the Top of our Spindle : These *Corpus Sancts* are good Signs, when seen aloft ; but bad Omens, and denote a great Storm, when seen on the Decks. It is a small glimmering Light, like a Star, when aloft ; but when on the Deck, it appears like a Glow-worm. It is the Opinion of Mariners, that it is a Sort of Jelly, incorporated by the Wind, Rain, Sea Vapours, and Air ; because it is never observed unless in stormy Weather.

We sailed right before the Wind, which was South-west, but were obliged to keep continually



Pumping till the eighteenth Day; when we made the Isle of *Labos*, about twelve at Noon. The Night we got safe into the Harbour, and anchored at twenty Fathoms Water, in clean Ground, between the two Islands: Here we resolved to careen our Ship. Accordingly, observing the Time of high Water, we put her into a Cove, in the southernmost Island, where we hauled her up as far as we could on the Land; and our Carpenter and Hands set to, work the next Day. This Island is barren, and without fresh Water. Here we killed several Seals, Sea Lions, Boobies, and Penguins; Sea Fowl about as big as a Duck, whose Flesh is very ordinary Food, but the Eggs exceeding good. Here, also, we found a small black Fowl, which makes Holes in the Ground to roost in at Night, whose Flesh is very good; and a great many Vultures and Crows. We had careened our Ships, and were in readiness to sail on the twenty-sixth, and sailed to the Island *Fernandos*, and made the middle Bay on the seventh of *August*, Winter being just over there; which continues only for two Months, viz. *June* and *July*. We have verbal Accounts here, of several Men who have been left, or cast away, and have lived some Time, and very well, on this Island. Here we mended our Sails. There is Plenty of very good Fish of divers Sorts. It is very pleasant on the Shore, and very healthy; so that the Men who had been ill on our Voyage, perfectly recovered their Healths; for the green Pimento Tree diffused a very agreeable and refreshing healthful Smell all over the Island. Here we spent some Time in taking Wood on board, and likewise in laying Water up, which here is very good; we also boiled a considerable Number of Sea Lions, of which there are Plenty here: We had, also, Plenty of young Seals, which eat very well; only their Livers are

unwholesome : And at the South End of the Island we found some Goats, of which we killed about thirty, which were excellent good. Here were, also, Plenty of Turneps and Watercresses, which were of great Service to us in curing the Scurvy ; of which we gathered a very large Quantity.

So, having refreshed ourselves very well on this Island, we resolved to steer for *Cape Verde* in *Chili* ; on the twelfth, made the Island of *St. Jago*, where we anchored, and sent our Boat on Shore. Here we bought some Hogs, and Black Cattle (for our Voyage round *Cape Horn* to the *Brazils*) ; as also, some Corn and Maize. Here the People, from the ill Usage they had formerly met with from the *French*, are extreemly sharp, and really dishonest ; for if they trade with you, and can't get the Advantage of you which they think you would have of them, they will snatch your Goods, and run away with them.

We weighed Anchor on the twentieth, and sailed from hence round *Cape Horn*, in 51 Degrees 15 Minutes Lat. as our Pilot informed me, I being only a Merchant on board, and therefore do not pretend to make a methodical Journal, only as I promised to give an Account of the most material Passages in our Voyage home. Round the Cape the Weather favoured us extremely, and nothing happened, that was material, only that we were chased by a Pirate-ship for about twelve Hours, on the twenty-ninth ; but the Night coming on, it favoured us so, that we lost her. On the fourth of *September* we made *Faulkland's Island*. Here we saw a great Number of Porpuses, which often leaped out of the Water, of an uncommon Sort. On the fifth we had the Misfortune to have one of our Men fall into the Sea, as he was throwing the Lead ; and he was drowned before we could give him any

Help. We had very brisk Gales at South-west. We sailed, and made *Cape St. Antonio*, near the Mouth of the River *de la Plata*, in *Paragua*, on the twenty-fifth, the Wind South by West; when we stood out to Sea, and made the Isle of *Grande*, on the Coast of *Brazil*, on the twenty-ninth. We got a Pilot, who conducted us into the Watering-cove, at the innermost Point of the Island. In sounding as we went in, we hardly met, in any Place, with less than ten Fathoms Water. The Island is about nine Leagues long, high Land near the Water-side: It abounds with Wood, has Monkeys, and other wild Beasts; Plenty of good Timber, and fresh Water, Oranges and Lemons. We had pleasant Weather, but extremely hot. We here received a Letter from our Owners, commanding us home, and not to go for *New England*, as designed. Here we got Beef, Mutton, Hogs, Fowls, Sugar, Rum, Oranges, and Lemons (so that now we did not want good Punch). During our Voyage from the *Gallapagos*, I applied myself to the Perusal of my good old Man's Memoirs, which I took very great Delight in; and finding the whole Series of his minor Years attended with such a Number of unaccountable Accidents, hardly to be paralleled, I thought proper, as I designed them to be publish'd at my Arrival in *England*, to digest them in a more regular Manner than I found them wrote in his Manuscript; but neither added nor diminished; nor did I in the least vary from what he himself had wrote, as to the Accidents of Life; only I made some Amendments, which I thought necessary: For his Absence from *England* so long as fifty Years, had occasioned him, in some manner, not to be well acquainted with the Language as it is now spoken, and (by his living without any Conversation so long a time) had made him, in some measure, forget his own Mother-

Tongue. Though I really think, taking that into Consideration, that his Account was very polite ; yet, had his Life been publish'd, as in his Memoirs, it would have appeared very obsolete, and difficult to be read, though ever so entertaining. I accordingly collected all the Passages of his first twenty-eight Years together, and thought proper to make a Book, or Part by themselves, that Part of his Life being different from his hermetical Confinement on the Island, which at first sight appeared so full of Horror, and nothing but a Prospect of the most miserable Condition that could befall him. He no sooner look'd round him, and, depending upon Providence, as a Supporter of the distress'd, but he found almost every thing necessary for human Life on that small Island ; and he, who then thought of nothing but immediately perishing in the most miserable Condition, has lived, by the Help of Divine Providence, in a safe and plentiful Manner ; and is now so inur'd thereunto, that he despises the populous World, and its Vanities : He also considers its pompous Glory to be of no more Substance than a Shadow ; and that there is no Felicity on Earth, unless in Solitude. I likewise methodized his Account, during his Residence on the Island, in the former Manner ; and made another Book, or Part ; which with this Account of my finding him on the Island, and my Conference with him, compleats my Design : So that it can't be called an imperfect Description, but complete, in three Books. So I return to my Voyage.

In our Voyage from *Juan Fernandes* we saw a very large Bird, which is called an *Alcatres* : These Birds spread their Wings from eight to ten Feet wide. In the *Brazils* is a Serpent call'd *Liboya*, or the *Roebuck Serpent*, the Report of which is incredible (in my Opinion) but affirmed by some of the



the *Portuguese*; viz. that there are some of the thirty Feet long, its Body being as big as an Hog's head, and destroys a Roebuck at one Meal. Here we trafficked for several Sorts of Drugs. We treated the *Portuguese* very civilly, who supply'd us with all Things necessary for our Use. During our Stay here, there arrived a Brigantine laden with Negroes for the Golden Mines. Here four of our Men died, and three ran away from us, the last of which we had just Occasion to be thankful for, rather than sorry; for *Timothy Anchors* over-heard them discouising, that they designed to mutiny at our next sailing, but was doubtful whether or no they might get enough on their Side to over-power the Captain, and his Party; and agreeing, among themselves, that it was a very difficult Matter to become Masters of the Ship: And, besides, considering the Hazard they run, in being punished, after such a severe Manner as they should be, if found out, by any means, before they could accomplish their Design, or if they should fail in their Attempt; made them rather chuse to desert the Ship, than continue any longer. Though our Captain was an extraordinary good Man, yet Rogues will be always employing their wicked Thoughts; and neither Clemency nor good Usage can make them perform their Duty in their Stations.

The tenth of *October*, after having set *Antiope* one of our Negro Women, on Shore, who refused to be christened as *Diana* was, we began to sail, but kept *Elizabeth* and *Juno* on board; the Captain resolving that she should live with him as his Servant, and by that means would bring up *Timothy's* Child: We did not meet with any thing very remarkable; but after about twenty-four Hours sail, we pass'd the Tropick, and the next Day saw Land. We stood from it South South-west, and

Had close cloudy Weather all Night, with Showers of Rain. When Day broke, we saw *Ascension* Island, at about a League's Distance; and about nine o'Clock we came to an Anchor. The Sea is here very deep. The next Day we weigh'd Anchor, and sailing North North-east, till the seventeenth, with a fresh Gale at West South-west, we crossed the Line. The next Day an ugly Accident happen'd; for we brought a young Bear from *Mexico*; and our Men being often used to play with her and teaze her, it proved very fatal to one *Thad O'brian*, an *Irish* Boy, of about sixteen Years of Age, who had been fretting the Creature with a small Rope, which he made a Noose to, and slipp'd her hind Leg into it, and so worry'd her. Her Blood growing warm, and she being enraged at his hunting her to-and-fro on the Deck, where he happen'd to slip down; the Bear immediately seiz'd poor *Thady* by the Neck, with such Violence, that, before any body could deliver him from her Paws, the poor Boy's Throat was tore to-pieces; so that he died instantly.

We sailed but very slowly now, meeting with continual Calms, and directed our Course for *Cape Verde* Islands; but on the twenty-sixth we had a heavy Tornado, attended with Lightning, which fell as if the Element had been on Fire; but it continu'd only for a short Time: Afterwards the Weather proved extreamly fair, the Wind being full South. A Sailor going up to furl the Main Top-gallant on the third of November, in the Morning, saw Land, and supposed it to be one of *Cape Verde* Islands, bearing North-east, distant about seven Leagues, smooth Water, and fresh Gales: About four o'Clock we bore North North-west, and went with an easy Sail till Day-light, and made the Island of *St. Vincent*; when, about nine o'Clock,

we anchored in the Bay, in about five Fathom Water, where we rode till the next Day; and then we went to *St. Nicholas*, another, and one of the largest of the *Cape Verde* Islands. These Islands are so called from *Cape Verde* in *Africa*, and are mostly inhabited by *Portuguese*. One of them is called *Sall*: It derives its Name from the prodigious Quantity of Salt which is naturally congealed in Salt-ponds. There are some poor Goats on the Island, and some wild Fowls. Here are *Flamingoes*, a large Fowl much like an Heron, but bigger, and of a reddish Colour: They feed together in muddy Ponds, or where there is but little Water. They are hard to shoot, being very shy.

In *St. Nicholas* we traded with some of the *Spaniards* for *Ambergrease*; but they were very fraudulent, having counterfeited it much. Here are some Vineyards, and Plantations, belonging to the *Portuguese*; and Wine, much like *Madera*, of a pale Colour also, and thick. The People are swarthy and the Inhabitants live scattering in the Valleys.

While we were at this Island, we scrubb'd our Ship's Bottom, and dug some Wells on the Shore where we got fresh Water. Here an ugly Accident had like to have happened: For one of our Men going down into the Hold with a Candle, set fire to a Bale of Cotton, which, by his Carelessness, had like to have been the Loss of our Ship: But (Thanks to God) it was discovered, by its smothering just before it began to blaze out; so that by immediate Help, we got it extinguished. Very soon after we hoisted it upon Deck, for fear any of the Fire should remain, and revive again; and because we would have it in mind, for our Safety.

On the eighth we went to the Isle of *Mayo*, another of *Cape Verde* Islands, but made no Stay. We saw at South-west, the Island *del Fago*, which is marked

markable for being a *Vulcano*, or burning Mountain, out of which issues Flames of Fire; but they are only discerned in the Night, and then are seen a great Way at Sea: Yet there are Inhabitants on this Island (as I have been informed by the *Portuguese* of the Island of *St. Nicholas*) who lived at the Foot of the Mountain, near the Sea. There are, also, Cocoa-nuts, Plantanes, Goats and Fowls.

In the Island of *St. Aritanio*, another of the *Cape Verde* Islands, there is a very large Spider (as I was informed by the same *Portuguese*) which weaves its Web between the Trees; and it is so strong, that it is difficult for a Man to get through. Here are, also, wild Affes; likewise, Salt-pits, where great Quantities of Salt are naturally made by the Sun's Heat; with which they load yearly several Ships, and are able to sell much greater Quantities than they do, if they had but vent for it.

Having dispatched our Affairs at the *Cape Verde* Islands, we weighed with the Flood, having a small Gale at South South-west: On the seventeenth it began to blow, and veer'd to the South-west by South. That Evening we saw three Sail of Ships at West North-west, bearing as we supposed, for the *Canary* Islands, as well as ourselves. The Night coming on, which was extremely clear and fine, we passed the Tropic about the Break of Day; soon after which we observed a North Bank lying in the Horizon. We then provided for a Storm, which those Clouds denote. The Wind was at North-west. We brought the Ship under our Main-sail and Mizzen only, and ballasted our Mizzen; but yet the Wind and Seas were too high for us, and every Wave seemingly threatened to overwhelm us; so that we beat up and down with only our bare Poles, which we feared would break in upon our Deck, which must have foundered us, in case it had so happened:



pen'd: We also lower'd our Main-yard, and Fore-yard down a Port-laft, as I observ'd the Sailors call'd it, that is, pretty near the Deck; and the Wind blew fo extreamly fierce, that we did not dare to loofe any Head-fail at all: For, if we had they certainly would have been blown away. During the Storm, it rain'd exceeding fast, which continu'd for about four Hours, when it changed and was pretty calm; and we began to get every thing in good Order. The Wind that Evening changing to South-west, about fix the next Evening we faw the Pike of *Teneriff*, at about nine Leagues Distance. We faw fome Flying-fish and a great deal of Sea-thistle swimming. We fail'd all Night with a fmall eafy Gale, and at Break Day made the *Canaries*; bearing at North-west by West, about three Leagues. We crowd'd all our fail, and came to an Anchor, in the Harbour of *Santa Cruz*, in the Island of *Teneriff*, on the twenty-first, in about thirty Fathoms Water, black flimy Ground, about half a Mile from the Shore. The Land being for the moft part pretty high, it is very bad going afhore here on Boats; and Ships riding here are often forced to put to Sea, or to move their Anchors, by reason the Road lies fo open to the East. Ships are here fupply'd with good Water between the Coves, where they generally water.

*Sancta Cruz*, a fmall Town fronting the Sea, has two Forts to fecure the Road: Here fome Englifh Merchants refide. Their Houfes are low and uniform, cover'd with Pantiles. Here are Oranges, Lemons, and other Fruits; alfo, Flowers, and Sallading; and a great Number of pleafant Gardens. At *Oratavia* the Country is fo full of Rifings and Fallings, that it is troublefome to walk up and down in it: Mules and Affes are moft ufed by the People. Here grows the right and true *Malmfey* Wine; but

are also *Canary* and *Verdona*, or green Wine: Likewise, a great many Convents. Ships are forced to slip their Cable, perhaps three or four times, by reason of the Winds, and put to Sea before they can take in all their lading. Here are Wheat, Barley, Maize, Beans, Pease, Apples, Pears, Plumbs, Cherries, Pomgranates, Citrons, Oranges, Lemons, and several other Fruits, excellently good; also, Horses, Asses, Mules, Cows, Goats, Hogs, Deer, and Fowl, both tame and wild, in great plenty. Provisions are dear on the trading Islands, but cheap on the others.

*Fero* Isle is very remarkable: It hath no fresh Water, only in the middle of the Island, where there grows a Tree; which being continually cover'd with Clouds, from its Leaves always drops great Quantities of excellent Water. These *Canary* Islands are commonly the Rendezvous of the *Spanish West-India* Fleet, where they generally receive Orders for unlading their Wealth.

From the Harbour of *Sancta Cruz* we sail'd, on the twenty-fifth of *November*, to the *Canary* Islands: Here the Soil is so fertile, that they have two Harvests in a Year. Its Commodities are, Honey, Wax, Sugar, and the best of Wines; of which we took in a sufficient Quantity of each: Here are, also, Dragon's-tree, which produces a red Liquor call'd Dragon's-blood. These Islands are exceeding wholesome, tho' they are inclinable to Heat.

Having taken in the Cargo which we design'd from these Islands, we sail'd from thence on the third of *December* for the *Madera* Island, with a fair Wind at South South-west, and saw several Ships sailing towards the *Lizard*: The next Day at eight in the Morning, we made Land, which was the *Madera*, at about four Leagues Distance, and came to an Anchor: Here are many Fountains and Rivers,

Rivers, which refresh the Country. It is a very beautiful Island, exceeding fertile, and produces excellent Wine, which is very strong. We anchored in the Port; which resembles an half Moon not far from the Town. Near this Island is another not so large as this (which is about six Leagues in Compass) call'd *Porto Sancto*, which affords much the same Commodities as *Madera*. Here we took in about thirty Pipes of *Madera* Wine; and having accomplished our Business, we left that Island on the tenth, and sailed for the *Lizard* with a westerly Wind. We had not sail'd above six Leagues, but it changed to North-east and the Sky began to be cover'd with small hard Clouds, very thick, one by another, which we imagin'd an approaching Storm: Accordingly, we provided for it, by reeving our Top-sails, and took in our Sails as fast as possible. The Wind began to blow a very brisk Gale, and soon after the Storm began; the Wind still increas'd by Squalls of Rain and Hail, which came very thick and fast, and the Sea ran very high; so that we were oblig'd to run before the Wind. We shipp'd little or no Water, tho' some wash'd into our upper Deck; and with some of the Waves a Dolphin was cast thereon. The Wind blew very hard, but about eight Hours after, it abated its fierceness and then the Wind veer'd to the West, and the foul Weather broke up, and we had smaller Gales with some Calms, and fair Weather. On the eighteenth the Wind veer'd to South South-east, which continu'd a brisk Gale till the twenty-ninth and we kept right before Wind and Sea, the Wind still increasing; and we made the *Lizard* on the twenty-seventh, at about three Leagues, and stood in for the Land, and came to an Anchor in *King's Road*, January 3, 1724-5.

Thus I have given an Account of our Voyage from Mexico, as I promised, which I hope may not be offensive to any body; it being my Intention to divert the Readers, rather than displease them.

N. B. The Ship belonged to Bristol, I communicated the following Memoirs to a Friend in London, in order to be published; which, if approv'd of by the Public, I shall, at my Return, be very well satisfied. In the mean Time, I have Business calls me to Peru and Mexico again; in which Voyage I hope to see poor Phil. my good old Hermit. And so I take my Leave, and end the First Part.

Bristol, Nov. 6,  
1725.

EDWARD DORRINGTON.



THE





T H E  
*ENGLISH HERMIT*

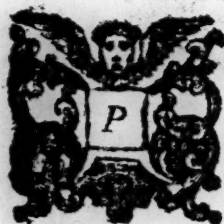
---

B O O K II.

---

*An ACCOUNT of the Birth and Education of PHILIP QUARLL; as, of the most surprizing Transactions of his Life, from his Infancy to his being carried away.*

*Taken from the Memoirs he gave to Mr. Edward Dorrington, the Person who found him on the Island.*



*PHILIP QUARLL* was born in the Parish of *St. Giles*, in the Year 1647. His Father *Thomas Quarll* formerly a Master Builder, having unfortunately ruin'd himself by Building, was at last reduced to work at the laborious and mean Business of Brick making: His poor Wife, also, was obliged to lend her Hand to the labouring Oar; so went a char-

which slavish and confining Occupation rob'd her of the necessary Time to attend the Fruit of her conjugal Affection, her beloved *Phil.* so that she was obliged (whilst she and her poor Yoke-fellow were drudging to get him Bread) to commit him to the Care of one kind Neighbour or another, for a small Consideration, till he could prattle, and go alone; at which Time she put him to School to a good old Almswoman, where he continued till he was six Years old.

One Day a Neighbour who formerly had the Care of the Child in his Mother's Absence, having contracted a particular Love for him, being a very pretty Child; finding him, after School-time, sitting at his Father's Door, takes him by the Hand, and leads him to his Mother, then at work at an old Lady's House in *Great Russel-Street.*

The House-keeper, who was naturally fond of Children, seeing this pretty Child, takes him up in her Arms, and runs up to her good old Lady, who had just ended her customary private Devotion.

The Child, whom the poor Woman kept very neat and clean, beyond what could be expected out of her small Gettings, was naturally very handsome; being tall for his Age, and well shaped; his Features regular, and well-proportion'd; his Complexion fair; his Hair long, and curling; his Countenance mild, and sprightly; his Behaviour gentle and easy: All which Qualifications rendered him completely amiable, and made the old Lady conceive an Inclination for him uncommon for a Stranger's Child, especially of so mean a Birth.

Thus having often kissed him, she wished he had been her own. But why, said she, can't I do for this lovely Creature, tho' no Kin to me by Birth? Nature, who has endued him with Qualifications proximal and suitable to my Inclination, has, by  
 Sympathy,

Sympathy, made him related to me. His Mother gave him Birth, which, without Prejudice to his own Life, she could not refuse; now I'll give him Education, the principal and most necessary Cause by which real Love can be expressed to a Child.

So, having given Orders, that a good School might be inquired after, she put him to board to a Master, whose most commendable Character of instructing his Scholars, in their Duty to God and Man, as well as in Literature, had procured him a considerable Number of Children of the best Families. There she intended to have kept him till he was, by Years and Learning, qualified for some genteel Trade; intending to leave him in her Widow forty Pounds, to set him up, when out of his Time.

But now ill Fate begins to shew its Aversion to poor *Phill's* Happiness: The worthy Lady died suddenly, and was interr'd a few Days after, to the unspeakable Prejudice, and threatening Ruin. But watchful Providence, who had decreed him Good, averted the apparent Evil, and only permitted some Interception to her Purposes, the better to raise his Esteem of her succeeding Favours, when sensible of them.

The Master, having conceived a particular Love for the Boy (whose uncommon Docility, and extraordinary Aptness in Learning, had overtaken the rest of his School-fellows, tho' of a much longer standing) was very much vex'd at the Thoughts of his going away to his Parents, they being no longer able to continue his schooling: He was unwilling to part with the Boy, and much disturbed to lose twelve Pounds a Year for a Boarder. His Love for the Child, whom he had, in a Manner, adopted for his own, would now-and-then rouse slumbering Charity, whom Self-interest too often casts asleep.

... said he, such blooming Wisdom and forward Learning should wither away for want of Cultivation. Thus having ponder'd awhile, Love and Charity, after a long Struggle with Interest, gained the Victory: The old Man concludes to give him his Learning, if his Relations would only find him in Board and other Necessaries.

This being concluded upon by both Parties, *Phil.* continued going to School for the Space of four Years longer; during which Time, he made himself a complete Master of the Grammar, Writing, and Arithmetick; he also made a vast Improvement in Singing, having all that time been taught by a Master, who attended some Boarders three times a Week; who, finding an extraordinary Voice, and natural Disposition, in the Boy, took a Fancy to teach him: So that *Phil.* was, in some Respects, qualified to attend the School, in the Nature of Usher, had his Age permitted it. But as he was, as yet, too young to keep the Scholars in that Awe which is necessary in a School, the Master only gave him his Board, till the elder Scholars left off, and he was grown bigger; intending then to allow him sufficiency to maintain himself, as others in that Station. But ill Fate still attends the poor Boy: The good old Man died in less than a Twelvemonth, and was succeeded by a superannuated Nonconformist Minister; who, having not so prosperous a School as his Predecessor, had no Business for an Assistant: so *Phil.* was a second Time obliged to return to his poor Mother (his Father being dead); who, not being in a Capacity to do for him, as his Education and natural Parts really deserved, proposed to him to learn some Trade, in order to get his Bread honestly and creditably, when she should be no more able to help him; having, by her hard working, and frugal living, made shift to

F.

lay



lay up Five Pounds, which she dedicated to the Purpose.

Poor *Phil.* who had conceived a Notion that there is a Servitude and Hardship entailed upon that Station, was very loth to resolve upon entering into it; but as he was a very discreet Boy, not inclined to play, as Children commonly are, and seeing that there was a Necessity for him to resolve upon something; to make his Choice the more easy, he consults the Master's Nature and Temper, rather than the Goodness and Profitableness of the Trade: And as there lived in the Neighbourhood a Locksmith ever since he was born, who, being great with his Father, would often play with him, when a Child, and now and then give him Farthings to buy Truings; he chose to be bound to him; which was done about a Month's Time.

They both agreed wonderfully well, the Master being very kind and good natured, and the Man diligent and careful; so that those Fears of meeting with Hardship being dispersed, he cheerfully worked on, without thinking the Time tedious. But the Happiness, though slight, is but of a short lasting for the poor Man, having been bound for a Relation, who failed, had all his Effects seized upon and himself thrown into Goal; and poor *Phil.* in a Year's Time, was obliged to come to his Mother again.

This Accident was a vast Disappointment to the Boy's learning his Trade, he being obliged to be idle, his unfortunate Master begging that he would seek after no other; hoping every Day to make his Affairs, and carry on Business again: So that the Lad, for want of Employment, would play about the Streets with Neighbours Children.

One Day as he was playing a Leap-frog with other Boys, there happened to go by one *James*

*Turner*

Turner, an House-breaker, who taking notice of his Activity, which much exceeded the rest, judged he might be of great Use to him in the Practice of his Art. The Meanness of his Dress, which spoke him of no considerable Family, gave him Room to hope that he might easily get him : So having stopt a while, he took the Opportunity, that the Boy, being hot with running and jumping, went to drink at a Pumb hard by. He takes him by the Arm, saying, Do you mean to kill yourself, Child, to go and drink cold Water now, when you are hot? Come along with me, and I will give thee a Draught of good Ale : You shall only go a short Errand for me. Will you, Master? the innocent Boy answered ; I'll go your Errand, if it's not too far : So followed him to an Alehouse, in a blind Alley, not far from thence, which he commonly used. Being come, he calls for a Quart, and bids the Boy take a hearty Pull ; which he did, being very dry, and the Liquor as pleasant : This being done a second time, it began to creep into his Head, not being used to strong Drink ; and in a little time he fell asleep on the Bench on which he sat.

The Seducer, thinking himself secure of him, leaves him to take his Nap, shutting the Door upon him, and charging the People of the House not to awake him, nor let him go away, when awake, till he returned ; so went to get ready the Implements necessary to set his evil Project in Execution ; having determined to rob a rich Merchant that Night, in which wicked Action he intended to make the harmless Boy his chief Instrument, by putting him in at an Hole he was to break, and then to open the Door for him, under the Pretence that it was his Uncle, who was so ill-natured as to lock him out, if not at home at the Shop shutting up.

Having got the Tools, he returned to the Boy whom he found just awake, and very uneasy to go home, having slept till it was dark, being afraid to anger his Relations by staying out late, contrary to his Custom, being used to orderly Hours, and would have gone away, had not *Turner*, whose Project would have been quite unhinged, used all the Device he was Master of to persuade him. First he besought a Supper of that which the Boy liked best, who since his being come from the Boarding-school, had been used to none but coarse Meat, his poor Parents Affluence affording no better: Then, to divert away the Time he intended to prolong till his Opportunity suited, he told him several Stories, and, most particularly, that of his pretended Uncle's Unkindness to lock him out of Doors, and of his cunning Invention to get in at his own Time, and unknown to him; but that he was afraid he must be forced to lie out that Night, which would be his Death, being used to such Hardship. The poor tender-hearted Boy, who could scarce forbear crying, whilst he related this dismal Story of his Uncle's unkind Usage, asked him what was the matter he could not get in that Night as well as at other Times? Because, replied the sly Knave, the poor Boy that used to come in is sick of the Small-Pox, as I have heard from you fell asleep. What! can't you get some other else? said simple *Phil*. I would do that for you, could tell how to get in my own Home; for my Mother goes to Bed betimes, being obliged to get up early. As for that matter, answer'd the subtle Projector, do not trouble yourself; I'll provide a way for you. Thus having removed both that, and all other Obstacles the Boy raised, he persuaded him to stay.

But ever-watchful Providence rescues his insnar'd Innocence. Some Hours before he was to go about the Execution of that evil Project, *Turner* was apprehended for a great Robbery he committed the Night before in *Lime-street*; and the Boy, being in his Company, was also carried before a Magistrate. But the Justice understanding, by the innocent Boy's Defence, he hardly was yet guilty of any Robbery, having regard to his Youth, and modest Countenance, reprimanded him for his Easiness of being drawn into bad Company, and warned him to be more cautious for the future: So discharged him, and committed *Turner*; who was hang'd.

That Accident, though very lucky, by preserving innocent *Phil.* from being made accessary to a Robbery which would have put his Life in Jeopardy, at the End proved fatal; he having thereby gained the Character of belonging to some ill Gang: For which Reason, nobody cared to be concerned with him, which grieved his poor Mother.

The poor Widow (being left with her unfortunate Son, who she fear'd would take to some evil way for Want, which often tempts the most innocent inclinations) not being able, out of her small Gettings, to maintain him, as when assisted by her late Husband; and seeing no Prospect of his Master's coming out of Prison, and being set up again; endeavoured to get him into some Place to wait upon some of her Mistresses: But the unlucky Accident of being had before a Justice of the Peace, with a notorious House-breaker, frustrated her Endeavours; so that poor *Phil.* was obliged to continue with his Mother in a very mean Condition, which his honest Mother very much feared would induce him to evil Company, of which the Parish she lived in swarm'd: But the good Instructions which were given him in his Infancy, before bad Examples could have



made any Impression on his Mind, kept out of his Thoughts all wicked Devices. Thus, seeing the Probability of Amendment in the Station he was in, he resolved upon going to Sea, wanting for that Employment neither Character nor Recommendation, which he was sensible would be a hard Matter to get, by reason of this most fatal Accident.

Thus, having imparted his Design to his loving Mother, who, with much Reluctance, acquiesced in his going from her, and leaving his native Country, where she once had Hopes to see him well settled; she, with weeping Eyes, implores the Almighty to direct and receive him into his Protection: And as she was acquainted with no one that could direct and advise him in that Matter, she bid him go to *St. Catherine's*; There, said she, you may chance to hear of some Captain or Master of a Ship, bound for some short Voyage, who, perhaps may want a Cabin-boy; which is, my dear Child, all that your Age and Strength qualifies you for: In a few Years, with the Help of God, you may find some advantageous Opportunity to advance yourself by your Learning. So, having given him Sixpence to bear his Charges, with a tender Kiss, she goes to her wonted Occupation, and he strait to *St. Catherine's*, where Providence had prepared a Master for him; he being no sooner come thither, than a Captain of a Ship, bound for the *East Indies*, taking a particular Fancy to him, asked him whether he would go to Sea; and that, if he was so disposed, he would take him to look after his Cabin and provide very well for him.

The gentle Manner in which he spoke to the Boy, and his mild Countenance, made a vast Progress in his Affection: So, having joyfully accepted his Offer, he desires that he may run Home, and acquaint his Mother of it. The Captain, having taken his Name

Name, and Place of Abode, gave him Half a Crown to spend with his Mother, and then to come to him, at the Sign of the *Black Boy*, near the *Iron Gate*; that he need bring no Cloaths with him; for he would provide every thing necessary for the Voyage.

The overjoy'd Boy, having told his Mother of his extraordinary Success, gave her the Money, being in great haste to return to his new Master: So, having embraced his tender Mother, and she her dear Son, weeping over one another for some time, he leaves her at her Work.

The good Woman, tho' she had all the Reason in the World to be easy in her Mind, that the Boy was out of those Temptations which great Want, and bad Company, might lead him into, could not be reconciled at his going from her: But, seeing no Remedy, she sends Clouds of Prayers after him, accompanied with Showers of Tears, recommending him to the Care of Heaven, to whom she daily made Addresses for his Prosperity.

*Phil.* who from his Infancy had been used to be from his Mother, was less disturbed at his leaving her, nothing but his new-intended Voyage running in his Mind; so hastened to the Rendezvous his new Master had appointed him; who, not expecting that he would return, was so glad to see him, that he went that Moment and bought him both Cloaths and Linen fit for the Sea; so equipp'd him anew Cap-a-pee; then took him home, and in a few Days after set sail for a Three Years Voyage.

During their sailing, *Phil.* whose agreeable Aspect and Temper had gained him all the Ship's Crew's Love, being often with the Man at the Helm, soon learn'd the Compass; and, by the Instructions every body on board strove to give him, in a little time he was qualified for a Sailor; which

his Master being made sensible of, whom he often diverted with his Singing during that Voyage; allowed him Sailor's Pay, the following Voyage which was soon after; for in less than three Weeks time the Ship was new-laden, and set out again to the same Place, and was gone as long as before; the End whereof it return'd home richly laden, in a shorter time than was common: Which being put in the News, as usual, prompted a certain Number of *Drury-Lane* Nymphs to go down to the Place where they heard the Ship was arrived supposing that the lusty Sailors, having a long time been confined to salt Meat, would, at their Arrival being flush of Money, purchase a Bit of fresh any Rate.

Being come to *Gravesend*, where the Ship lay, they found, according to Custom, the jolly Crew in an Alehouse, spending, like Asses, what they had earned like Horses, even before they had received it.

At the Ladies coming, the elevated Sailors, who had been sailing on salt Water for the Space of three Years, and since set their Brains floating in strong Drink, for six Hours, having lost the Order of their Reason, ran headlong upon the Quick-sands, where most of them lost all they had before they could get off.

The ingenious Ladies, who had more Wit than Honesty, improved the Absence of their Understanding; and, being very expert in the Art of Fathoming, they fell to examining the Depth of those shallow-brain'd Fellows Pockets; which finding very low, they were much disheartened from going on for fear of running a-ground: But, understanding that their Ship had not yet been clear'd, they cast their Anchor there, waiting for a fresh Gale.

Mean time the merry Sailors, fearing no Storm, gave themselves up to Sport ; and, for better Diversion, every Man takes a Playfellow, and goes aside, leaving bashful *Phil.* behind ; who, being a Stranger to the Game they were going to play at, did not dare to put in for a Partner : But cross Fate still attending him, a Snare is laid in which he must fall.

Every Man, but modest *Quarll*, being gone away with a Wench ; one, being gone Supernumerary, staid behind. The crafty Creature, who, from her first coming in, had fix'd on the innocent young Man for her Quarry, kept at some Distance from her Comrades ; waiting their Absence, to work her Design.

Unthinking *Phil.* having no Suspicion of her cunning Devices, lying intirely unguarded against her sly Attacks, stood no long Siege, but capitulated at the first Summons. 'Tis true, she was provided with such Artillery, as no Fortifications against Love could withstand ; but would force the most stubborn to surrender, or at least parley, which is a Fore-runner thereof.

Thus, having fix'd her Basilisk's Eyes upon him, as being the first Battering-piece the Sex plants, when they purpose a Breach in a Man's Heart ; she charges him with a Volley of engaging Words, whilst her Looks and Carriage offer him such prevailing Terms, as no Man of any Feeling can refuse : Therefore, being an exquisite Mistress of her Art, she soon obtains her Ends.

Poor *Quarll*, whose Heart, till then, had never been besieged, finding the Invader more tempting than dreadful, she having a very agreeable Shape, charming Complexion, and most engaging Features, surrenders up at Discretion, and submits even to bear the Yoke of Matrimony ; which, in less



than an Hour, is laid upon him ; the Chaplain of Man of War, who lodged in the House, happened to come in at that critical Minute.

By that Time, the absent revelling Crew were cloy'd with their Mistresses, and had dismissed them with rough Usage, and ill Language, of which the generally are flush, when Money is scant.

The disappointed Wretches, seeing no Redress for their Treatment lately received, which they well knew proceeded from want of Money, concluded upon staying in that Place till their Ship was clear'd; by which time their Appetite being sharpen'd again, and they flush of Money, and hoping they would also be better Chaps ; they took a Garret in a little Strong-water-shop, where they made shift to kennel together, and live upon short Commons.

Our new-married Couple, whose Money was so scanty, were also obliged to put up with indifferent Quarters ; but the Hopes of receiving the poor Husband's Pay soon, and withal, the Thoughts of being protected from a Goal, which she was in Danger of before married, being the principal Advantage she proposed to herself by having a Husband, it made her now easy. But she, and all the rest of her Companions, were disappointed. The Ship being overladen, the Cargo proved damaged, by the Leaking of the Vessel, which is commonly made good by the Sailors : So that, instead of three Years Wages being due, the poor Men stood indebted to the Merchants.

That Disappointment put the unfortunate Seamen, and especially the Ladies, into a sad Consternation ; the former being obliged to go another Voyage with empty Pockets, and the latter to seek for Cullies to support their Extravagance, and to pay for new Lodgings.

*Phil.* who, during the Voyage, had saved a little Money, which his Master gave him at sundry times, being disgusted at the Sea, by the late Accident, resolves to seek his better Fortune in another Manner.

His crafty Wife, who was, by her Marriage, screened from her Creditors, depending upon her former Occupation, indulged him in that Resolution; so they set out with that Little he had, and arrived pretty bare. Finding no Friends in *London*, his Master being dead whilst he was at Sea, he resolves to list in the Foot-Guards for Bread, having no other Dependence; so consults with his Spoute about a Lodging, till he had Quarters appointed for him. She, indeed, was best acquainted with the Town, and knew of several that would suit both their Stock and Station, but durst go to none, having bilk'd most of them, and left a Score with the rest. But Lodging must be had before Night; and the Day was far spent; which set her a thinking, Necessity being the Mother of Invention: And she, as is peculiar to Women of her Employment, being well acquainted with it, was no Stranger to Shifts; and presently finds one.

Having pondered for a short time, she concludes upon going to her last Lodgings; where, tho' she was considerably in Debt, she questioned not but she should still find a kind Reception, and that her Landlady, where she had been about a Fortnight, having given over her Debt, would at her coming slacken the ill Opinion she had conceived of her, and afford her kind Usage: So, having fix'd a Rendezvous for her Husband, she hastens there; where she found, as was expected, the old Woman as overjoy'd as surpris'd to see her; and much more, when she understood she was married to a Sailor, lately arrived from a three Year's Voyage; who in a short

time, would be clear'd, and that then she would rub off her Score. The old Woman thinking herself secure of her Debt, and sure of a good Customer, bids her kindly welcome; and that she hoped she would take no other Lodging, but in her House; that she would make every-thing as easy and convenient as she should desire; being as welcome to score, as with ready Money.

The subtle Woman, having gained her Ends, goes and fetches her Husband, whom the over-reach'd old Woman receives most kindly, expressing her Love by a Quartern of All-fours, the chief Commodity of her House: That, being drank, was succeeded by a second, at the new Tenant's Cost; which, being brought with a chearful Welcome to as many as they pleased, encouraged the coming-in of half a dozen more: These wa:m'd the Company, and particularly the Landlady; who having greeted *Quarll* for his most happy Marriage, over and over, fell upon praising his Wife, whom she had known for a long time; giving her all the Encomiums that Virtue itself could deserve.

In this manner they lived about a Fortnight, still upon Score; which increasing very fast, and no Prospect of Money, it obliged the Landlady to put them in mind; often asking when they expected the Ship to be clear'd. *Quarll*, who discern'd, by the Cloud which appeared over her Brow, a threatening Storm, begins to think of an Harbour, and forthwith goes and lifts himself in the Foot-Guards.

In that mean Station, which often is the last Spite of a surly Fate, a Continuation of Misfortunes attends him: The Company, where he listed in, is full of Mercers and Shopkeepers, who for a Protection took on in the Service, and quitted their Pay to the covetous Colonel, to be exempted from Duty, which made it fall heavy on the effective

Men:

Men: But kind Providence, who ever limited the Evil that attended him by Fortune, ordered this its venacious Influence to turn to his Advantage.

One Day that he mounted Guard out of his Turn, being upon Duty at the Park-gate next to *Chelsea*, about Ten at Night, the Place being clear of People, he fell a singing to divert melancholy Thoughts, which Solitude is apt to indulge: At that time happened to come by a Colonel of the same Regiment, who, being merrily disposed, stopped for several Minutes to hear him sing: *Quarll*, having made an End of his Song, fell a whistling the Tune; at which the Colonel came to him, saying, How can you profane such a fine Tune with whistling, when you can sing it so well? Pray let me hear you do it once more; and grace it with that good Voice Nature has given you. *Quarll*, having made some few modest Excuses, yields to his pressing Solicitation, and sings the same Song over again, and with more Care than before; which so pleased the Gentleman, that he stood half an Hour with him, asking him Questions: And, being by him inform'd whose Company he belong'd to, having his Consent to be exchang'd, he gives him Five Shillings to drink his Health; and charges him to come to him, at the *Mitre Tavern at Charing-Cross*, the next Day at Eight of the Clock in the Evening, and ask for Colonel *Bonguard*: So went away.

*Quarll*, being off Duty, the next Day went to the Place, at the Time appointed; where he finds the Colonel, in Company with half a Score more Gentlemen, who received him with more Civility and Complaisance than is commonly paid to Men of his Coat: So, having desir'd him to sit down amongst them, and the Glass gone round once or twice, the Colonel having praised his Singing to the Company,

Company,

Men:



Company, he was desir'd to compliment the with a Song; if he pleas'd, with that he sung to the Colonel the Night before. *Quarll*, having modestly told the Gentlemen, he wish'd that his Skill and Voice, deserv'd the Honour of the hearing, and that he would do the best he could having, at their Request, drank another Glas, he sung the Song they desir'd to their great Satisfaction and Applause.

After a short Space of Time was spent in the Praise of Singing, and a Talk of what an engaging Accomplishment it is, either in Man or Woman some of the Company, holding that the Charms of Musick are no-wise inferior to the Power of Love it occasioned a very agreeable Debate; there being in the Company a Gentleman unfortunately under the Circumstance, who would give Love the Supremacy over all that can affect our Minds; seeing it strips Man of the Benefits of his own Senses, of the Strength of his Reason, and Soundness of Judgment. No Object is fair, but that whose Idea hath impress'd the Mind; no Harmony heard but in the beloved Voice, or that which sounds its Praise; Dainties have no Savour in the Absence of that which everything relishes; the fairest Days are but dull, not enliven'd by the Light of the Charmer's Presence.

Thus he ran on, till the Company, perceiving he was beginning to be uneasy, desired *Quarll* to sing the Gentleman a Love-Song, who spoke much in its Praise; which he did, and pleas'd the Lover so exceedingly, that he made him a Present of Half a Guinea. The Gentleman, who was altogether for Musick, having ask'd *Quarll* whether he had any-thing in the Praise of it, having also Request answer'd; made the rest of the Company

gave a Song in the Commendation of what suited their Inclinations; some being for a Bottle, others for Roving, and others for a Country Life.

*Quarll*, being provided with such Songs, entertained them to their Desires till Supper was brought up; which being over, the Company who had been so well diverted with *Quarll's* Singing, consulted together to do him Service: And, as he was well qualified to teach, they proposed to recommend him Scholars. A Gentleman in Company, having a Sister, who intended to learn, he writes a Letter to her, desiring she would make use of no other Master; which Letter he was to carry the next Morning: And as his Regimental Cloaths might lessen her Opinion of his Merit, he bids him, before he goes, to call at his Lodging, and he would present him with a Suit of Cloaths, which he wore but part of last Summer, and therefore little the worse for wearing. And, as he wanted but an Hat to be compleatly dressed (having an extraordinary handsome Head of Hair), another Gentleman bids him call on him for one; so that he had all he wanted to set him out.

The Gentleman having given him Directions where to go for the Things, and the Colonel his Promise to get him discharged out of the Company he did belong to; at least, to have him exchanged into his own; they every one gave him their Crown apiece: So they departed, bidding him not fail coming thither again that Day Sevensnight.

This unexpected, but lucky Adventure, like a sudden Surprise, unframed his Reason, and makes poor *Quarll* overlook the only Obstacle that could obstruct his blooming Happiness. Thus transported with seeing himself Master of more Money than ever he was worth before, and in a fair Prospect of advancing himself; he hastens Home, and in his

Guard-

Guard-Cloaths, in which he ought not to be seen there; being a Dress obnoxious to most, and more especially to Creditors.

His Landlady, who, till then, had been made to expect her Money, thinking he only waited the Ship's being discharged, to go another Voyage; seeing him in that Hope-killing Dress, gave a Shriek, as if she had seen the Devil: Slanders and Abuses, striving for Utterance, croud in her foaming Mouth, and, like a rapid Torrent, which, running from a large Extent into a narrow Channel, swells, and overflows its Banks; so her Passion, finding her Mouth too small a Passage, breaks out through her Eyes: Thus, having shriek'd and roar'd awhile, which occasion'd all her Lodgers to come down, she charges poor astonish'd *Quarll* with Shoals of Abuses, in the vilest and most insulting Terms the most inveterate Malice can express.

Thus having exhausted her Stock of Slanders, her Tongue having uttered all the Evil she could, she set her mischievous Hands to work upon his Wife, who, being come to see the Occasion of her shrieking, stood like one bereft of her Senses: So, having torn her Head-cloaths off her Head, with Words suitable to the barbarous Deeds, she thrusts them both out of Doors; which tho' the rudest Action that could denote the Unmercifulness of her intended Revenge, was to them, at that time, the kindest Act she could perform.

That unexpected Treatment was no small Check to *Quarll's* chearful Disposition, but having consider'd, that one time or other he must have stood the Shock, he rejoices that it is over; and, being free from the Care of getting her paid, he has at that time nothing to think of but to find another Lodging; which being then too late to go about,

he concludes to wait for Morning at a certain Cellar at *Charing-Cross*, which is open all Night. Going along, she mildly blamed him for his unadvised coming in that Dress, which, he might imagine, could produce no better Effect. To which he answered, He never could have wished for better: For, by her turning him out of Doors, she had paid herself; which he would have done, had he stay'd: But now he was come away, being better provided, and in a better Way, he would have better Lodgings; so told her of the Adventure, which much rejoiced her; and from that time made her resolve to forsake her former Way of Living, which Misfortunes only drove her to, being not led by evil Inclination, as many are. The Morning being come, whilst she went to seek for Lodging, he went for the Cloaths he was promised the Evening before, which fitted him as if made on Purpose, and made him appear as one of the genteel Employment he was recommended for. Being new shav'd and powder'd, he went with the Letter, according to Order; and was receiv'd suitably to the Recommendation given him. The Lady, being just up, made him drink Chocolate with her; then, having required a Song, she agrees with him for a Guinea a Month, the usual Rate, and gives him a Guinea at Entrance, as 'tis common; so began that very Morning, promising to recommend him to a Lady, who had Two Daughters; which she accordingly did, and sent him thither the next time he came.

This fair Prospect of an handsome and genteel Living, which he always was desirous of, made him forget his past Misfortunes. Thus joyfully he returns to the Cellar, where he had spent the Night before, and where he had appointed to meet his Wife, after she had fix'd upon a Lodging; who accordingly



accordingly came in less than a Quarter of an Hour, hoping she had pleased her Husband, which she resolved for the future to endeavour. She sat down expecting his coming, not knowing he had already waited hers; his Change of Dress concealing himself from her, not expecting to see him in so different Garb from that which she left him in: Which perceiving, comes up to her, and takes her by the Hand, going to ask her the Success of her Wait; but she, putting it out of his Power, in an angry manner bidding him go about his Business, having none with her, prevented his Speaking. His Silence which she took to proceed from Bashfulness, occasioned her looking him in the Face; in which discovering her dear Husband's Features, to whose natural Handsomeness his genteel Cloaths were no small Addition, she was seiz'd with such Surprise, that it struck her Speechless for ten Minutes.

*Quarll*, discerning her Disorder by the fading of her fresh Complexion, was as much surpriz'd as she. Thus trembling, he takes her in his Arms: My Dear, said he, what's the Matter? Are you not well? Having recovered her Speech, she embraced him, saying, How can I be ill, when my dear Husband and Soul appears so well?

These kind Words and the Return of that Flame which first kindled Love's Fire in his Heart, inflamed it afresh; hardly can he govern his new raised Passion: Thus, giving her a Kiss, My Love, says he, have you got me a Lodging? Yes, my Dear, replied the loving Wife; you shall ever dwell in my Heart. But I want to lie in your Arms, answers he; that can't be done here. Well, then, said she, I have provided a fit Place. So, having each of them taken a Dram, they went away.

Sally, who till then was a Stranger to real Love, now feels its true Smart ; and tho' she has for some time enjoy'd the Fruition, the only Bliss pains-taking Lovers aspire at for the Reward of all their Toils and Labours, and the happy Shore Love's Compass points at, yet she seems uneasy, as expecting something more : She cavils with Time for flying too fast. While Days and Nights are too short for her to behold her Dear. She continually bears his Image in her Heart, and wishes she could for ever have him in her Arms ; which from that time she consecrates to chaste Embraces ; devoting herself wholly to the diligent and assiduous Practice of the necessary Qualifications in a Wife, to render an Husband truly happy : The Execution of which wise and virtuous Resolutions, gained her the tenderest and most sincere Love and Affection a really fond Husband can show or express to a darling Wife.

They lived in that truly happy State about half a Year, at the End of which, cruel Fate, envious of his uncommon Happiness, most barbarously robs him of it, almost as soon as he had favoured its incomparable and matchless Sweets.

One Summer Morning, loving and truly-observing Sally, knowing her Husband delighted in Flowers and Greens, went to *Covent Garden*, in order to buy some to garnish her Windows and Chimney, being the only Things wanting to complete the Neatness of her Lodging, which she kept in the greatest Order. As she was going, she most unfortunately met with the perjured Knight, who deceived her out of her Virtue, and with whom she had lived a considerable Time, in Expectation of his fulfilling the Promise he made her, when she put him in Possession of her Maiden-Treasure ; who, being glutted with his sacrilegious Theft, most basely and

un-

ungratefully left her destitute. Fain would she have shunn'd the fatal Principle and Origin of her present Misfortunes, and hellish Motive of her late Life, which she mortally abhorred, and zealously renounced : But inexorable Fate has decreed her Ruin ; she can no wise avoid him ; he was too near before she perceived him, and had hold of her Hair ere she could shift it out of his Way.

Being thus suddenly stopp'd by him, she would have embraced the severest Death, to avoid the Seducer, by whom her Innocence was first betrayed. The irreconcilable Antipathy she had conceived to the mortal Enemy of her newly-retriev'd Virtue, being startled at his terrifying Appearance, set her whole Faculty in an Uproar, and scares away her Senses ; not so much as a Word left her to express her Trouble.

The amorous Knight, whose late Love for the fair Sally (whose regular Living had repaired the Charms her former lewd Life had very much damaged) was revived, and grown more passionate than ever, flattering his Hopes with the Thought that her present Disorder proceeded from Joy and Surprize, took the Opportunity of an empty Hackney-Coach which was going by, to bring her to his Lodgings : So, having stopp'd it, he put in the poor dispirited Woman, altogether insensible of what was done, or designed ; but having, with the shaking of the Coach, recovered a little Spirit, and finding herself so much in his Power, as aimed at her total Ruin, she gave a loud Shriek, which occasioned the Coach to be stopp'd by some People who were going by ; but his protesting he had no other Design but to take her to a Friend's House till she was intirely recovered, representing also the Danger of exposing herself by opposing his kind Intention, being then near a Street where he and she

had lived together a considerable time, in some measure pacified her : So having put his Head out of the Coach, he tells the People who stood by, that his Wife, who had been lately overfet, was afraid of the like Accident, which made her scream ; so bid the Coachman drive on ; during which time he entertains her with all the Marks of a passionate Love, swearing over-and-over, he was her Slave for ever ; and that now kind Fortune once more brought 'em together, none but Death should sever him from the Person he loved so dear ; and that he would expire in those soft Arms which often gave him Life.

These fond Expressions, which she formerly had given Credit to, are now Upbraidings and Reproaches for her too easy Credulity, and only increased her Hatred for the Deluder ; which, at that time, she thought proper to conceal : Thus, restraining her Passion, she assumes a feigned Calmness, and mildly returns him Thanks for his Love, which she cannot indulge, being married. Married ! said he, and I living ! Was you not mine ? I was, indeed, reply'd she, blushing with Anger and Shame. But what was I ! I tremble to think on't. Why, said he, my Love and Heart's Delight, and shall be, whilst Breath keeps it in Motion. Oh ! false Man ; said she, weeping most bitterly, repeat not those deluding Words, which betray'd my Virtue. Come, said he, cease that Flood which overflows my Soul with the bitterest of Sorrows, and relieve the most penitent of Men from the cruellest of Deaths : My submissive Observance of your Inclinations shall henceforth atone for all past given Displeasures. Mean you, said she, as you speak ? By all that's sacred, I do, reply'd he. Then, said she, joyful, set me down here, and I'll forgive what's past. No, my Dear, this being a Request I cannot in Honour grant, I may, without Breach



of Promise refuse ; I must see you quite re-established first.

By this time the Coach was arrived to the directed Place, which proved to be an House where she last lived with the Knight ; which being open, the Landlady at the Door, obliged her to go without Resistance ; fearing it would be of no Use but rather prejudicial to her Design : So she quietly went in, hoping she should have a better Opportunity to get away, after she had made the Landlady understand that she was married. But the fond Wretch, hoping the Knight would lodge there again, who proved an extraordinary beneficial Lodger before, went out of the Room, and left her to his Pleasure.

Poor Sally, seeing herself at the Point of being a second time undone, there being no one to assist her within, nor Hopes of any Help from abroad, in the Room she was in being backwards, next to the Gardens, and distant from the House, and therefore out of hearing ; gives herself up to Despair, seeks the Opportunity of laying hold of his Sword, which she was resolved to fall, rather than yield to his adulterous Desires. Thus, whilst the Knight was labouring to express the Height of his Love, in the most endearing Terms, and prevailing Words, the most passionate Lover could invent ; she, all of a sudden, snatch'd the Sword from his Side, and turn'd the Point thereof towards her Breast, in order to execute her barbarous, though virtuous Resolution. What do you mean ? said he, laying hold of her Arm. To get myself at Liberty, said she, which you basely refuse : So falls into a violent Fit, which lasted some Minutes ; which was no sooner over, but it was succeeded by another, and so on, for the Space of Three Hours ; at the End of which Time she was so faint and weak, that her Life was despaired

and so continued all Day; which made the Knight repent that he had forced her to stay, so much against her Will; heartily wishing that he knew where she lived, that he might send her home; which she not being well enough to tell, the Landlady, by the Knight's Order, got the best Room of the House fitted up for her: And the Bed being warm'd, she was carefully laid in it, and a Doctor sent for; who, having felt her disorder'd Pulse, said, her Indisposition proceeded from Passion and Grief; and ordered that she should be let Blood, which would give her oppress'd Spirits a present Relief. The Physician was no sooner gone, but the Surgeon was sent for, to perform the Doctor's Orders, which gave her immediate Ease, and in a little time caused her to sleep, which lasted all the Night.

This great and sudden Amendment much rejoiced the most afflicted Knight, who made a Vow not to leave her till she was restored to her wonted Health; sitting up by her all Night.

The next Morning, Sally, whose good Night's Rest had in a great measure recover'd both Strength and Reason, finding herself in a strange Bed, and from her Husband, was again seiz'd with Surprise, which did much threaten a Relapse. Heavens! said she, by what Inchantment am I here! What Fiends could ravish me out of my dear Spouse's Arms? Then, seeing the Knight stand by the Bed side, she gives a loud Shriek: Oh! vile Ravisher! said she, is it then by another of your hellish Stratagems that I am again betray'd into your Power? at which she fell into a violent Fit of Crying.—  
 Not, most virtuous Woman, reply'd the Knight, falling on his Knees; it is by Accident, of which I own myself to be the most miserable Occasion, for which I heartily ask both Heaven and you Pardon.

Then

Then he relates the whole Matter, which the Illness her excessive Grief and Passion brought upon her, had made her forget.

That woful Relation did but add to her Trouble by heightening her Grief. Oh! said she, with a fresh Shower of Tears, how can I now look on my dear Husband in the Face, when my very Justification turns to my Shame?

The Knight, who was in as great a Consternation as she could be in, takes her Hand, which lay motionless out of the Bed, and, bathing it with Tears, begs her to forbear terrifying his most penitent Son, promising to rectify all past Wrongs: You remember, my Life, said he, the Vows I made when you gave yourself to me: I renew them now, and would fulfil them, but that it would expose you to the Rigour of the Law: Therefore I'll only, for the present, settle Five Hundred Pounds a Year upon you for your Life, till, by your Husband's Death, I am empower'd to make you lawful Mistress of all my Estate. Pray compose yourself, and sedately consider on't, and, when 'tis come to Conclusion, I'll attend for your Answer: So withdrew for a while.

This generous Offer, expressing the Sincerity of his Love, for whom she had formerly more than common Esteem, in a great measure appeased her Passion; the offered Atoneement disarms her Revenge; she now pleads for him she had condemn'd and blames herself for the Crime she had charged upon him with. How could I, said she, think my Virtue safe in his Hands, on whom Love has given me an Ascendant (which is itself guilty of as many Faults as it covers)? if he went away with my Heart, it was but a Breach of Trust: Besides, my Absence was no Flight, it being occasioned by business.

Having made these reconcilable Reflections, and being at the Point of accepting his Offer, Conscience starts, and opposes her Resolution: Her Husband stands in the Way, rigg'd in all those engaging Qualifications which had won her Affection. This, coming into her Mind, in a manner scares away her Reason; she can't help loving both: Her Love for the Knight pleads Seniority, and that for her Husband Justice. The first is attended with Interest, the last is prompted by Virtue. The Debate is great, and both their Arguments strong: Reason is called to decide the Matter, which, having (as 'tis her Custom) sedately weigh'd the Cause, examined both Accidents and Incidents, at last seems inclinable to favour the Love for the Knight; but Justice, who is always in the right, will not resign it: Peace and Content, the only Motives worth contending for, must be consulted. They, being also cautious of giving a rash Verdict, examined on which Side they were in most Safety; and, finding themselves most screened from Upbraidings and Reproaches (their mortal Enemies) for the Knight, gave it of his Side. So Justice, who seldom gets its due, is forced to drop the Cause, and tacitly withdraw.

The Knight's Offer, being the softest Choice for an easy and quiet Life, which she could not reasonably expect from her Husband, who doubtless would, from the late Accident, conceive an ill Opinion of her Virtue, (which altho' at that time blameless, she could not with Modesty vindicate) having sent for the Knight, she speaks to him after this Manner:

Besides, I have had so much Reason to repent my being too credulous, by the many Vexations it has occasioned me now, that should I, upon the bare recollection of broken Promises, expose myself to the



same, you yourself could not but blame me. In deed, dear *Sally*, said the Knight, interrupting her. I own you have sufficient Cause to question my Sincerity; but I will this Moment remove it: So the Moment sends for a Lawyer, and makes the proposed Settlement; then gives Orders that a Merchant should be fetched for her, to take her Choice of the most modish Silks, and then for a Silk Night-gown for her to wear till her Cloaths were made: as also for all Manner of Linnen, Shoes, and Stockings. Then having new rugg'd her from Top to Toe. Now, said he, my Dear, you are intirely mine; give me Directions, that I may send your Husband what he can challenge as his own; so writes the following Letter:

“SIR,

“Left the Absence of her, who unthinkingly  
“gave herself to you for a Wife (tho’ not at her  
“own Disposál, being mine before) should cause  
“you any farther Trouble, these are to satisfy  
“you, that I have retaken Possession of my own  
“to send you back her Cloaths, as being all  
“can claim a Right to. I am yours, R.

Having sealed up the Letter, and bundled up the Cloaths, a Porter was call’d, to whom Orders were given, to carry the Bundle and Letter, to the much perplexed and concerned *Quarll*, who spent the Night in unspeakable Torment. A thousand dismal Accidents glared at his alarmed Fancy, which created new Racks for his tortured Soul. He tumbl’d on his Bed like an unmaisted Ship tofs’d about by a violent Storm, cursing the tedious Hours for creating thus in the dark Night; taxing the Sun with Sloth, and Nature with Unkindness. Thus, bereft of his Senses, and quite void of Reason, he snarls at the whole Creation.

At length, the long-wish'd-for Day having sent forth its Dawn, to proclaim its Approach, he starts from off the Bed whereon he lay as if upon Thorns, and like a mad Man, runs about to inform himself of what he dreads, more than Death, to know. But, having spent several Hours in diligent Inquiry after lately befallen Accidents, without hearing of any; Jealousy creeps in, which in some measure removes his former Fears, but no-wise lessens his Pains. Thus he returns home as much rack'd as before.

Being arrived, he finds on his Table a Bundle, and a Letter, which his Landlady told him were brought by a Porter. His Impatience to know the Contents of both were equal; but the Bundle being more surprising to him, he precipitately opens it first; which finding it to be every Individual Part of the Cloaths his Wife had on the Day before; when she went out; with the Surprize, he lets it drop out of his Hands, and, like one Thunder-struck, remained speechless for several Minutes. Then fetching a deep and heavy Sigh, attended with a Shower of Tears, he bitterly exclaims against himself for questioning the Faithfulness of that Love, of which he now has such fatal Proofs.

Thus, concluding she had drown'd herself, and that the Letter would inform him of the Cause thereof; he takes it up, saying, O that thou hadst been a timely Forerunner of the fatal Tidings thou art Bearer of! Yet, for her dear Sake that wrote it, I'll peruse thee, tho' thy Contents be but Racks for me, and the most cruel Tortures that ever were or can be invented.

But great was his Surprize, when he found it to come from a Man; and inexpressible his Confusion at the Contents: His Senses are all in an Uproar; he blames his Eyes for not seeing right; his Ap-

prehension for mistaking the Meaning : His blind Love taxes his Reason with Rashness, the mistaken Expressions being but Illusions proceeding from an Oppression upon the Intellects : So lay down the Letter till his disturbed Mind was better settled. Yet he cannot be easy ; he must, with some other Writing, try whether his Eyes are still defective : On which, finding no Fault, he hastily takes up the Letter again ; but alas ! it was the same as before. My Judgment, said he, has been as much wrong'd as my Love. So, after a few Considerations, calling to Mind, that as an Accident had procured her to him, he ought, without Reluctancy, to surrender her again ; having made a Resolution never to venture any more on that uncertain State, which commonly promises Happiness, but often brings Sorrow : He shifts his Lodging, and goes to live where he was unknown, the better to pass for a Batchelor ; in which free Station he enjoy'd Peace undisturb'd, and Pleasures uncontroul'd, for the Space of twelve Months : But cross Fate still pursues him ; he must again be fetter'd, and bear yet heavier Chains than before. A second Mate is allotted him, who, though very chaste, dooms him wretched, being short of other Qualifications necessary in a Wife to make a Man happy.

This Woman had been bred up from her Infancy under the Care of a Lady, whose two Daughters Quarll taught to sing, and had lived with her in Station of a Chamber-Maid, ever since she was big enough to officiate in that Place ; during which Time, having behaved herself to her Mistress with Content, she gain'd her Affection ; so that this good Lady, being desirous to advance her Maid, whose Age fitted her for Marriage, the chief Settlement for a Woman, she cast her Eyes upon her Daughters Singing-Master, who she thought would make

her a good Husband, having observed him ever since he came to her House, to carry and behave himself very decently. Thus having declared her Mind to her, who had already a great Inclination that Way, she readily submitted to her Lady's Will, who promised to bring it about.

The good Lady, having conceived the principal Means to bring her Design about, took the Opportunity of *Quarll's* next coming, to propose it to him, promising to make her worth three hundred Pounds, which was the only Motive that could engage him to break the Resolution he had made. The young Woman being also very agreeable in her Person, and extraordinary obliging to him, he readily accepted the Offer.

The old Lady, having so far prevailed upon him, is resolved to push on till quite concluded; so has them married in less than a Week, and gave them Lodgings in her House, where they continued but one Month. The new-married Wife, thinking herself, in some measure, under Confinement whilst in the good Lady's House, to whom Duty and Gratitude obliged her to be more than indifferently observing, being likewise somewhat ambitious of living great, persuades her Husband to take a House, and furnish it; which being done according to her Desire, they went away from the kind old Lady to live by themselves, without considering the Expence of Housekeeping, which they both, till then, had been Strangers to, but, in a little Time, became too well acquainted with.

The three hundred Pounds being gone in furnishing the House and paying two Years Rent, and many Years Wages to a couple of Maids, one whereof she kept in the Station she herself had but lately overcome; *Quarll* was obliged to reduce his Charges, and level his Expences to his Income; so



discharges the superfluous Servant, whose Business was only to indulge her Indolence, and increase her Pride.

That sudden lessening of her Attendants checked her ambitious Disposition, in such a manner that she threw her into the Spleen; which was like to have cost him more Money in Doctors, than the Servant's Wages which he endeavoured to save.

Being taken very ill, and knowing not what to complain of, a Doctor was granted, at her Importunity, rather than her Need; who, being consulted and finding her Indisposition lie in her Temper more than a Defect of Nature, order'd her Medicines to make them both in the same Condition.

Her Strength decaying, and the Apothecary's Bill increasing, which are the usual Effects of imaginary Illness, made her Husband apprehensive, that considerable Charges might accrue from her fanciful and imaginary Distemper, which he would not indulge, and feared to check too suddenly, lest it might produce some other ill Effect: So, in Compliance to her natural Pride, he promises her going into the Country, as being a proper Expedient to save Money, and to be rid of a grunting Companion at least during the Summer.

This Proposal, suiting her Ambition to imitate Quality (who, for the generality, go out of Town about that Time of the Year) was soon accepted of; and that Opportunity of being freed from one of the greatest Plagues which can befall a Man, he to him as soon approved.

*Quarll*, having got her in the Mind, was no more dilatory to get it performed; but made diligent enquiry about the most convenient Place in the Country, for Remoteness and Cheapness; which being informed of, he forthwith takes Horse; and having found a good old Countryman, with his Wife

and Daughter, in *Yorkshire*, whose diligent Cares, and frugal Living, whilst young and strong, had been rewarded with a moderate Competence, to keep him from toiling when grown old; who, having a pleasant and commodious Habitation, distant from meddling and inspecting Neighbours, and Room to spare, were very glad to take in a Gentlewoman to board, being some Company for them in their remote Living, and therefore stood upon no Rate: which suiting *Quarll's* Circumstances and Wishes, he began to consult on Means to keep his Wife there for a Constancy: And as he well knew she never would consent, nor he be able to force her to it by Violence, he applies to Stratagems. Thus, having given her the best Character he could to the old People for good Humour, he tells them, that indeed she had one Failing, but that it was no-wise troublesome, provided one give her her Way: She is very vapourish, and looks for great Attendance: O dear! that's Quality Distemper. Well, if that be all, replied the old Folks, she shall not want for any one Thing. More, said he, I must caution you of, which is this: She will soon be tired of her Lodging, and will be for returning to *London*; so will seek all Opportunities to steal away, if she finds herself opposed in her Desires: Therefore 'tis best not to contradict her directly, but be sure watch her narrowly, lest she gives you the Slip. Never fear, reply'd the good People; we'll take care of that: She never shall go one Step alone. She is not apt to lay violent Hands upon herself, and do herself a Mischief? No, no, reply'd he, there's no Danger of that; you may trust her alone within Doors at any time, but never abroad. One Thing more I must give you Notice of; that is, when she finds she cannot get away, she'll be for sending Letters: I charge you, let her have no

Paper, only at first; to write to me once, or twice, or so; and that you'll guess, when proper, by her railing, which will be a Token of her being discomposed: And, as for her Diet, she is something dainty; but I see you have Plenty of Poultry, which she loves very well. O dear Sir, answered the old Woman, she shall have Fish, Flesh, and Fowl, when she pleases. We have a fine Pond in the Ground, well stock'd with Fish; and Cocks and Hens enough, you see, about the Yard; and for Butcher's Meat, 'tis but two or three Hours Ride to the next Town.

So *Quarll* having agreed, and paid one Quarter, before-hand, which he promised to do whilst she boarded there, he returns to *London*, in order to fetch his Wife; who having projected a Greatness of living in the Country, which she was disappointed of in Town, immediately inquired into the Appearance of the House, the Handsomeness of the Lodgings, and the Gentility of the Neighbours: To which Questions *Quarll* took care to answer suitable to her Inclination. So, having concluded to go the next Day, they went out to make Provision of such Things as cannot well be had in the Country; as *Nantz* Brandy, *Ratafia*, *Usquebaugh*, Coffee, Chocolate, and such Things as were necessary for genteel Company.

Being provided with every thing, they set out the next Day; but, as neither Lodgings, House, or Neighbourhood, answered her Ambition, nor his Commendations, he contrived to arrive in the Night, that she might not find the Deceit; and as the good People of the House, according to Direction, shewed her abundance of Respect, giving her the Title of Lady, and a good Supper being prepared; she inquired no further into the Matter.

The

The next Morning *Quarll*, having represented to his Spouse, it would be of Prejudice to him, if he stayd any longer from his Scholars, having already lost six Days, took his Leave of her, and left her in Bed, it not being her usual Time to rise: So having promised to be with her in a short Time, to see how she liked her Lodgings, he returned to *London*, having first renewed his Charge to the good People of the House, of giving her her Humour; and, above all, not to let her go out alone, nor consent to her coming up to *London*; which, in a little Time, he questioned not but she would be very desirous of.

*Quarll* being gone, the old People, according to their Charge, were extraordinary diligent and careful in pleating their new Lodger; who finding her Ambition gratify'd by their Observance, kept in that Day: But the next Morning, having a Fancy to walk out, the young Woman of the House took her to see the Ground and Cattle which belonged to them, as being the principal Things she could shew her; there being neither House nor Habitation, but their own little Cottage, within Sight. She, who thought her Lodgings to be in a handsome and creditable House, near a genteel Neighbourhood, with whom she might converse; finding the Reverse of her Expectations, could not conceal her Passion at the Disappointment; but falls a railing against her Husband in such a Rage as frighten'd the poor young Woman; who, doubting she was going in one of her Fits, ran home to fetch her Father and Mother; who, being come, were as much frightened as their Daughter, at her furious Countenance, the Blood being ready to start out of her Face, and her Eyes out of her Head. Thus, fearing she would grow unruly, each of them took hold of one of



her Arms, and so, in a Manner, dragg'd her home; where, being come, they would have laid her upon the Bed : But she, who took this Act of their Caution for an Effect of their careful Attendance, told them, that indeed she could not find Fault with them; and that their Habitation might suit their Birth; but really it did not hers, which her Husband very well knew; and therefore she never would forgive him for bringing her thither, and that he should soon know : So desired them to give her Paper and Ink, if the House could afford such a Thing.

The good People, who had been cautioned to give her her Humour in that at the Beginning, having none at home, sent the Boy that attended their Sheep on Horseback to the next Town for them; then, leaving her to compose herself, they retired to bewail among themselves her Misfortune, which they perceived to be the Effect of Pride, reflecting upon the Happiness of their own Condition, and the Pleasure of a contented Life.

\* Now, said they, she has been brought up in a City, where Excess of Pleasure and Luxury are made the only Means to arrive at Content; but alas ! how widely do they miss their Aim ! Their Life is a continued Series of Cares; their Emulation and Vanity in Fashions, Entertainments, and such like, together with their inseparable Companion, Envy, only contribute to make an unhappy Life still more miserable.

\* N.B. The Lines marked with (\*) are set down Word for Word with his Memoirs, for these Reasons, 1. I thought it a Pity to alter any thing from his Notions of the Pleasures of a Country Life. 2. And the rather, because it gives us very lively Ideas of the perfect Happiness he enjoys in his Solitude.

“ Her

“ Here this Gentlewoman wants for no Manner  
“ of Necessaries to make a Life comfortable, but  
“ has rather a Superabundancy. Could she re-  
“ ject that horrid Pain causing Quality of Pride,  
“ and learn a little Humility, 'tis that brings Con-  
“ tent, and sweetens all the Misfortunes of this  
“ Life. How preferable is our Station to hers !  
“ How solid is the Pleasure we enjoy in this so-  
“ litary Habitation, compared to the trifling Joys  
“ the Great Ones possess in the most populous  
“ Cities ! O happy Fields, and silent Groves !  
“ where nothing but eternal Rounds of Pleasure  
“ centre ! Here no Debaucheries, Riotings, Fa-  
“ shions, and luxurious Entertainments ; no Envy  
“ of others good Fortune, no Drunkenness, Swear-  
“ ing and Blaspheming the Mercies of the Al-  
“ mighty God, ever take Place, as in flourishing  
“ Cities ; but Providence gives us all Things with  
“ a bountiful Hand : In short, we have all we de-  
“ sire, and more than we justly deserve. Here  
“ the beauteous Birds, joyfully hopping from  
“ Bough to Bough, stretching their tuneful Throats,  
“ and warble out melodious Anthems to their  
“ great Creator's Praise ; whilst flowry Hills, in  
“ harmonious Echoes, repeat the same to the  
“ fruitful neighbouring Vales. Here's nothing to  
“ be seen or heard but universal Acclamations of  
“ Praise to the great God of all Things. This is  
“ the real solid Pleasure ; this is that makes us  
“ perfectly happy. For how much more eligible  
“ is the Company of irrational Animals, or even  
“ inanimate Things, than the Society of Men,  
“ who have divested themselves of all Things but  
“ Shape, whereby to distinguish them from the  
“ most deformed Brutes, or, indeed, from more  
“ horrible Devils ? This Gentlewoman has put

“ us in minſi of our own Happineſs, of which,  
 “ before her coming, we were almoſt ignorant ;  
 “ but now we may ſee, that Happineſs conſiſts not  
 “ in Riches, nor Content in gaudy Apparel.—  
 “ But why do we tarry here ? It is not proper to  
 “ leave the Gentlewoman ſo long alone, leſt, in  
 “ one of her Fits, ſhe ſhould do herſelf a Miſ-  
 “ chief: Therefore let one of us go to her.” So  
 the good Woman of the Houſe went to her, and,  
 finding her in Tears, uſed all poſſible Endeavours  
 to divert her Melancholy, but all to no Purpoſe ;  
 for ſtill ſhe was interrupted by Exclamations againſt  
*That Villain ! that Rogue !* her Huſband. The  
 good Woman, finding that Words could not pre-  
 vail, thought a Glaſs of Ratafia might do better ;  
 ſo deſired her to comfort herſelf, and take a Glaſs  
 of her Cordial ; to which ſhe ſoon conſented, and  
 after that four or five more, which had the deſired  
 Effect ; for her Melancholy was by this time turn-  
 ed into moſt violent Fits of the Spleen, and pre-  
 ſently into Drowſineſs. The Landlady, perceiving  
 her Condition, deſired her to lie down, and reſreſh  
 herſelf by taking a little Sleep : So, laying her  
 down upon her Bed, and watching her to Sleep,  
 retired.

After ſhe had ſlept an Hour or two, ſhe awakes,  
 in a very ſplenetic Humour, and calls to know the  
 Reaſon, why Pen, Ink, and Paper were reſuſed  
 her. Indeed, ſaid the old Woman, we did not  
 know that your Ladyſhip was awake ; and we did  
 not care to diſturb you ; but I'll bring it to you  
 preſently : So went and brought it. Which ſhe  
 no ſooner received, but ſhe began to write the fol-  
 lowing Letter :

Most barbarous of Men,

*WAS you afraid that my Indisposition (for which you most deceitfully did persuade me to leave London) would not kill me quick enough itself, that you have decoy'd me to an Oven, the Dulness whereof is sufficient to make any well-bred Dog pine itself to Death; here not being a rational Creature to talk to, but the insipid Folks of the Hut; who, being stript of their clumsy human Shape, will be as complete Brutes as their Oxen and Cows. Pray see that you forthwith fetch me hence, or expect to incur all the Resentment an injured Wife can shew, as soon as arrived to London, where I shall surely come in a few Days, though I was to travel all the Way bare-foot.*

Yours, &c.

MARY QUARLL.

This Letter being wrote, the good People of the House were in a great Consternation, whether they ought to send it, or not; but, after some Consultation about the Matter, they concluded it should go, lest her Husband should take it amiss.

Quarll, who expected some such Letter from his haughty Dame, as soon as she had discovered the Cheat, had, with a great deal of Judgment, prepared the following Answer.

My



My Dear,

*I* F your Pride and Vanity do outrun your Reason, it is no Argument my Compliance to them should hasten my Ruin : And if you consult your Circumstances, as I do my Ability, you'll not discommend

Your careful Husband,

PHILIP QUARLL.

And with that, one to her Landlord and Landlady, whom he thanked for their Care of sending the Letter ; but desired they would not trouble themselves with sending any more, nor give her Opportunity of writing, seeing it did but aggravate her Distemper ; and, above all Things, to have a particular Care she should not give them the Slip, and he would take Care to gratify them for their Trouble.

This obliging Letter, together with a Present of a Pair of handsome green Stockings, and Lemon-colour Gloves to the Daughter, did so win the old Folks Affection, that they were extreme punctual in observing his Orders : But that to his Wife had a quite different Success ; for, instead of putting her into Consideration, it set her in such a violent Rage, as would scarce permit her to read it throughout : So, tearing it to pieces, she storms out, *Consider my Circumstances ! wile Wretch ! let him behold my Portion, whether it deserves me no better a Being than a Hovel ! Landlady, send immediately to the Town, and get me a Place in the Stage against To-morrow ; for I'll go and tear that Villain to pieces.*

The good Woman was not a little displeased to hear her thus despise her House, which was the

best within a Mile round ; but as she imagined it was the Effect of her Vapours, instead of vindicating her House, which though old and low-built, was tolerable large, and very convenient, she seem'd to acquiesce with her, wishing it had been better for her sake : But as for sending to take a Place, it was then too late ; for by that time a Messenger could be got to Town the Office would be shut up ; but that the next Time she went out, she would take Care a Place should be taken : So excused it for that Week. In the mean time she gave her her Humour, being very respectful and observing ; which, suiting her Pride, made her something more easy, and in some measure diverted her raving Fits ; for she fully depended upon going the Week following, but was again disappointed by one mishap or other, and so from Time to Time ; till at last she began to doubt of their giving Orders, meaning to keep her there : Thus resolved to go herself ; but not knowing the Way, she desired somebody might be sent along with her ; which they were ready to grant, but never could be had, being always out of the Way, about some Business or other.

This continuing for the Space of a Month, or more, and no News coming from *London*, she began to think it was a Contrivance of her Husband's to be rid of her with only paying for her Board and Lodging, which she understood he had done beforehand, and agreed to do so during her Stay, which, very probably, might be for her Life ; but resolved to disappoint him, by privily stealing away, and at a venture seek out the Road to the next Town, not questioning but she should find somebody as she went that would direct her : But the old Folks, having been warned of such an Enterprize by her Husband, were too vigilant to give her an Opportunity

tunity of attempting it, never leaving her by herself from the Time of her getting up to her going to her Bed again : Which Over-attendance convinced her of her Imprisonment.

Then finding herself curbed in her Ambition, disappointed in her Pride, and trick'd out of her Liberty, without hopes of being reliev'd ; the Letters she sent to her Friends being intercepted ; she falls into a Passion suitable to her Case and Disposition ; which, having vented upon the People of the House for abetting and adhering to her perfidious Husband in so traiterous a Deed, her Spirits being exhausted so prodigiously with raving, that nothing but a cordial Dram could ever have brought them to their usual Tone, and which she by long Experience knew, calls for her grand Specific ; and, after she had drank three or four refreshing Glasses, she became more easy, and retired to Rest : When, having slept a few Hours, she awakes something better compos'd Thus, considering that all the Relentment she was capable to shew could not mend her Condition ; she therefore concluded to make her Landlord and Landlady her Friends, that if she did not enjoy her Liberty, as she propos'd, she might at least enjoy a little more Content in her Confinement.

Thus she resolv'd, and indeed kept her Resolution a long Time ; laying aside her haughty Temper, and curbing those violent Passions she had so long accustomed herself to, she now began to be much more familiar and condescending, than what she had hitherto shewn, to the great Joy and Surprise of the good People ; who by this strange Alteration, were in great Hopes her Madness was wearing off ; and, upon that Account, were extremely industrious to humour her in every Point ; using her with all the good Manners they were ca-

pable

able of: Which she easily perceiving, thought to make use of their Credulity to her Advantage; for she was a Woman of quick Penetration: And, finding how egregiously those ignorant People had been imposed upon, in relation to her Phrenzy, saw the only Means to regain her Liberty was, to pretend a Recovery. And, accordingly, by a counterfeit Change of Temper, endeavoured to persuade the People into a good Opinion of her; telling them, she could never requite their extreme good Services to her during her Indisposition; and lamenting her own Unhappiness in being so troublesome and fatiguing to Persons of so kind and obliging Behaviour. They, in like Manner, answered, that if their poor Services had contributed any thing to her Ease or Recovery, they were sufficiently made amends for all their Trouble.

Now the Scene was intirely chang'd; the raving, proud, ill-natured Gentlewoman became the most pleasant, sociable, and best-natur'd Person they had ever met with: And they, who just before conceiv'd so great a Dislike to her, were now so delighted with her Company and Conversation, that she was less alone than formerly, they always contriving some Diversion or other to drive away her Melancholy, and to prevent a Relapse; hoping to send the welcome News of her perfect Recovery to her Husband: Frequently pleasing her with odd Country Tales, shewing her all the Pleasures their Fields, Gardens, and Orchards could afford, with many other little Contrivances to pass the Time away; while she endeavoured to divert them with the comical Adventures of the *Londoners*. This she endured almost a whole Month, with all the seeming Good-nature imaginable; but finding herself in no Way to procure her Enlargement, and rather more strictly guarded than formerly, resolved to obtain her



her Liberty by Stratagem, which she designed in the following Manner.

There was a Servant in the House, whose Name was *Thomas*, and a lively, brisk, fresh colour'd young Man, indeed a Fellow of admirable Sense and good Manners: This Spark was of a very amorous Disposition, well versed in-Intrigues, and extremely obliging in his Temper and Behaviour; who, as soon as he saw *Quarll's* Wife, began to think of his former Way of Living. Now this young Fellow was born in *London*, of very mean Parents, whose Friends not being able to give him a Trade, he was obliged to enter himself a Member of the ancient and honourable Society of Lacqueys. His first Service was to a Widow Gentlewoman, where he learnt all the necessary Qualifications of his Employ; but his Mistress being a very religious Woman, going to Church two or three Times every Day, where he was obliged constantly to attend her, and so much Gravity notwithstanding his mercurial Temper, soon obliged him to quit his Post. But he, being an arch Wag, and sly Knave, soon advanced himself to be a Footman to a young Nobleman. Here he began to shew his Genius; for his Master, being a young Gentleman very much delighted with Love-Adventures, frequently made use of him in those Cases; and, finding him to be of a sharp, ready Wit, very careful, and well skill'd in Taciturnity, soon made him secret Messenger in ordinary to all his Intrigues; in which Station he behaved himself admirably well, having all the Accomplishments necessary for so weighty a Trust, *viz.* Vigilance, Dispatch, and Secrecy; and these so well managed, that he seldom fail'd in his Designs. This Post of Honour he enjoy'd for a long Time, with great Credit and Reputation, and gained so great a Share

in his Master's Affections, that he likewise made him first Minister to all his Affairs.

Now *Tom* is arrived to the very Summit of his Fortune ; regaling himself in all Kinds of Pleasure, beloved and trusted by his Master, honour'd and respected by his Fellow-servants, and, in short, might be said to be perfectly happy. But here that Jilt, which so long flattered him with her kind Embraces, at one fatal Blow removes all the Means whereby he ascended, and pushes him from the lofty Precipice to the deepest Sink of Poverty imaginable.

*Tom's* Master being a Lover of Variety, his Curiosity prompted him to see the Diversion of a Country Wake, in order to start some fresh Game ; and, to that Purpose, disguises himself like a plain Country Gentleman, and equipped his Man *Tom* in the same Garb, on purpose to make him his Companion in his Adventure. This Place, where the Wake was kept, was about ten Miles from the Nobleman's Seat ; so each mounted his Horse, and away they rode : When, being arrived at the Town, nigh which they were to hunt their Game, they both alight, and put up their Horses at an Inn ; and, having pulled off their Boots, out they walk towards the Place of Rendezvous : As soon as they came within Sight of the Place, they beheld the Fields prettily bespotted with different Companies, at as many different Diversions. In one Place a Parcel of Wrestlers, eagerly contending, with broken Shins, for a Pair of Gloves ; in another, a Company of Cudgel-players, with battered Ribs, fighting for a laced Hat ; some at one Game, and some at another : But *Tom* and his Master, who cared for neither broken Shins, or bloody Brows, resolved to seek out softer Combatants.

After

After they had walked up and down the Field seeing the several Diversions ; Well, *Tom*, says the young Nobleman, where's our Diversion ? Where are all our Girls got to ? O, says *Tom*, we shall find 'em presently. Hark ! I hear the Noise of Cat-gut ; and I warrant we find them there. So following their Ears, instead of Noses, they came to a most spacious Dome, vulgarly called a Barn, which they no sooner enter'd, but *Tom* says to his Master, Here, Sir, here's Variety for you ; here Nymphs of all Sorts and Sizes ; and, faith, of all Complexions ; they're all clean and neat ; all fit for the Game : Come, Sir, pick and choose. Which pretty smiling Rogue must be your Nymph ? Come, let's see what you'll do ; for I long to be at it. Do you long to see what I'll do ? says the Nobleman ; why, I intend to work Miracles ; I shall make my Nymph a Goddess, before I leave her. Well then, reply'd *Tom*, I suppose I may take the Privilege to make my Girl a Nymph at least.

While they were thus talking, they stood like two Hawks hovering over their Prey, not knowing on which to fix their fatal Talons, and the Rusticks staring at 'em with open Mouth, and distended Nostrils, not knowing what to think of 'em. At length Mr. Scrape, by tuning his melodious bawler'd Fiddle, summons all the Girls to Readiness, each preparing her Feet for the Sport ; while every *Hob* began to seize a Partner, and *Tom* and his Master (in the mean Time, you may be sure) were not idle : For, offering their Service to a Couple of pretty cherry-cheek'd Rogues, as *Tom* call'd them, the innocent Girls very gladly accepted their Offers, little dreaming their wicked Intentions ; but the Mischief was, the Nobleman had got the Girl which *Tom* had the most Inclination to ; which

sed such a secret Envy in his Breast, that be-  
 ne the fatal Cause of his unfortunate Disgrace..  
 Now the Dance was begun with great Fury on  
 th Sides ; the Girls ramping and tearing, and the  
 lows pulling, and haling, and shoving, and kiss-  
 , and tumbling like so many mad Devils, while  
 m and his Master, being Strangers to such kind of  
 version, stood like two Images, and the Country  
 lows mocking 'em ; which *Tom* observing, and  
 ing his Partner very dull, thought they should  
 ver out-do him in Caterwalling : Therefore,  
 ugging up his Shoulders, and rubbing his Eyes a  
 le bit, he began to be as brisk as the best. The  
 obleman, observing his Man *Tom*'s Alteration,  
 ought proper to follow his Example ; so, pushing  
 own two or three Girls, fell upon them, and kiss'd  
 m till they were almost stifled ; then, hoisting 'em  
 , extends his Mouth to a full Yawn, and laughs  
 loud, and with as great a Grace, as any of 'em ;  
 hile *Tom*, to shew his Activity jumps about a Yard  
 gh, always taking care to light upon somebody's  
 es ; which generally put the whole Company  
 to a loud Fit of Laughter, except the Person  
 orted ; who, in Compliance to the rest, was  
 igned to put her Mouth in a grinning Posture.  
 Thus they became the most facetious Companions  
 aginable (every one praising the two Gentlemens  
 od Humour and Activity) and, in short, became  
 e Wonder of the whole Company. But *Tom*  
 d his Master, having tired themselves and their  
 rtners sufficiently, began to think of retiring, in  
 er to refresh their weary'd Limbs ; and, mo-  
 ning the same to their Nymphs, the poor Girls  
 y willingly accompany'd them. Now, they  
 ought themselves secure of their intended Sport,  
 d conducted them, for that Purpose, to the Inn  
 ere they had put up their Horses.

As



As soon as they were set down, they order'd Wine to be brought, and a Supper got ready, in order to detain and intoxicate the Girls, if possible; and therefore they ply'd 'em very close with Liquor. Now *Tom's* Partner, being a very brisk lively Girl, never refused her Glass; but the Nobleman's was of a very mild, easy Deportment, and would drink but little: He, seeing her Temper, began to be very amorous, on purpose to try what that would do; but she, in so sweet and easy a Manner, check'd his Rudeness, that it rais'd in *Tom* a most violent Passion for his Master's Partner. At length, Supper was brought to Table, which was no sooner over, but Night began to appear: The two Girls, perceiving the Time, desired leave to go home, which the Nobleman absolutely refused; but *Tom*, thinking to make sure of his Game upon the Road, consented to go with his Partner; which the other hearing, begg'd not to be left alone, but that she might go likewise: The Nobleman (thinking he had not brought her to the desired Pitch) as heartily desired her to stay, vowing that nobody should wrong or hurt her; but when the other Gentleman return'd (meaning *Tom*) they would both conduct her home: So, by mere dint of Argument, prevailed upon her to tarry till *Tom's* Return.

Now *Tom*, as soon as he had got from the Town, began to attack his Fort, which after a little Parley, surrendered at Discretion; so *Tom* raz'd the Walls to the Ground, enter'd the Castle, and took Possession of the City: All which being transacted, he leaves her, promising to revisit her the next Day, and bends his hasty Steps towards the Inn, with a deal of Impatience; muttering these Words, as he went: *What a Blockhead was I to let my Master be too nimble for me! Ab! Fool that I was, to lose so delicious a Morsel, and take Possession of so easy*

Fool.

*Real! who, as soon as asked, consented: When the  
ber, with all the pretty engaging Airs, so modestly  
checks any thing that looks like Rudeness. Well, faith,  
since it is so, I'll make the best on't, and try whether  
I can't chouse him of his Partner: So said, so re-  
solved, and indeed so done.*

For, as soon as *Tom* came in, the Girl claimed  
their Promise; saying, the Gentleman was so rude,  
that she would stay no longer; desiring them either  
to go home with her, or let her go by herself. But  
*Tom*, desirous to renew the Sport, begg'd of her,  
with all the prevailing Arguments he was capable of,  
to tarry; telling her, he was a little tired with the  
Walk he had taken, and wanted to refresh himself:  
So desired her to stay, while he only took a Glass,  
and he would go with her. The Girl, very unwill-  
ingly, comply'd, and sat down again. The Noble-  
man, finding *Tom* had no mind to part with her,  
imagined he was bringing about what himself had  
so long endeavoured in vain; and therefore, pulling  
out his Watch, he starts up in haste, and says he must  
needs go, for it was past the Time that he promis'd  
to be at a certain Place: So tells the innocent Girl  
he very unwillingly left her; but he hoped this would  
not break their new Acquaintance, for he would pay  
her a Visit in a short Time, desiring to be excused  
for this Time; and he believed he could prevail  
upon the other Gentleman to conduct her home.  
*Tom*, who understood his Meaning, follows him  
to the Door, and there receives his Charge, which  
was, that he should bring her to a House they both  
knew, about three Miles off, as soon as possible:  
so took his Leave, mounted his Horse, and went  
thither, impatiently waiting for his Prey.

Now *Tom* was extremely pleased with his Mas-  
ter's Intentions, resolving to put the Bite upon the  
Sitter; and, as soon as the Nobleman departed, be-

gan to attack the Fortification with all the Artillery Wine and soft Words could supply him with : But the Defendant, Proof to Battery of this kind, held out nobly a long Time, and moved strongly for a Cessation of Arms, desiring leave to go home : But *Tom*, acquainted with the various Turns of Intrigues, resolved not to lose his Game, being well assured he should bring her to Articles in a little Time ; and began a fresh Attack, which lasted so long, that she was obliged to cry for Quarters ; but it being too late for going home, *Tom* persuaded her to lie there ; assuring her, that he would see her well provided for ; and so, in short, she blushing consented.

Thus *Tom*, having gained his Point, orders a Bed to be got ready ; and then desired his Mistress, who was, by this Time, much overcome with Wine and Sleep, to go to Bed. The poor Girl (still between Doubt and Fear) knew not what to say, but, trembling, denies what her Looks desired ; and, after a great many Arguments on both Sides, she resigns herself intirely to him. The sly Knave, joyful of his Prey, conducts his Mistress to Bed ; but, as they were going, the old crafty Innkeeper cries, in mere Form, I hope, Sir, that's your Wife, for I would by no means have any thing dishonest done in my House. Yes, yes (says our Rogue) you may assure yourself it is my Wife, or else I should not have offered to go to Bed with her, while the poor Girl, hiding her Face, ran up Stairs as fast as she could.

They had not been long above, when the Nobleman, uneasy at their Delay, returns to the Inn, and inquires after the Couple he left. Why, Sir, said the Host, they're a-bed. Abed ! says the Nobleman, a-bed ! Yes, answer'd he, it being too late to go home, they took up their Lodgings here. What ! are they a-bed together ? said the Gentle-

man.

man. Yes, says the Innkeeper; I left 'em together. The Nobleman, hearing this, stood like one Thunder-struck, his Eyes darting Lightning, and his Blood all in Flame; but, bridling his Passion, very coolly inquired where they lodged, saying he had some Business of Moment to impart to the Gentleman, and he must that Minute speak to him. The Innkeeper, unacquainted with his Design, very complaisantly conducted him to their Apartment; and knocking at the Door, told Tom the Gentleman was returned, and wanted to speak with him. Tom not being yet undressed, knowing his Master's fiery Temper, and the just Resentment he was sure to meet with, opens the Window, and out he jumps, without saying a Word; and, having bruised himself with the Fall, lay some Time upon the Ground; till, recovering himself a little, he precipitately got over the Garden-Wall, into which he had dropt from the Window; and scours over the Fields as fast as he could, without ever looking back.

But having run himself out of Breath, and thinking himself out of Danger, down he sits, reflecting upon his melancholy Circumstances. *O miserable Wretch!* says he, *what have I done? How dare I ever see my Master, who always reposed his Trust in me? And I, like a perfidious Villain, to deceive him! Certain Death attends me, if I go home; and, if I tarry here, there's nothing but Beggary or Starving; I have at once lost all Credit and Reputation, and see nothing but Ruin, unavoidable Ruin. O Woman, Woman! cursed bewitching Woman! what an infinite Number of Mischiefs are ye the Source of! But why do I exclaim against a Woman so innocent, and so charming, when I, the traiterous Deceiver, sought nothing but her eternal Misery? O just Heaven! 'twas you that saved her from impending Ruin, and*



*deservedly thro' all the fatal Effects upon myself. Well, I'll bear them patiently; load me with all the Evils you can bring, till they mount so high, you can lay no more. Raving and cursing in this Manner, he tired his Spirits, and fell asleep.*

Having slept some Time, he awakes, wondering where he was: *Did I dream*, says he, *or is it real? No, it must certainly be true; I am the most wretched Mortal breathing; the very same Ruin intended the poor innocent Girl, has justly fallen upon myself; and what is become of her I know not, nor dare I to inquire; but I hope, as Heaven has hitherto protected her, it will likewise preserve her from the evil Intents of my Master.* Reflecting upon himself in this Manner, he walked about till Day-light, not knowing what to do, or whither to go: He was not a great Way from *London*, destitute of Friends or Acquaintance, little or no Money in his Pocket, and durst not see his Master. Despairing in this Condition, he saw a Company of Haymakers going to Work; it being Summer-time; and resolves to make one of their Number, if possible; hoping by that means to keep himself from starving, and work his Passage up to *London*.

With this Resolution he attacks the Haymakers, asking them from whence they came, and whither they were going: which they answered very civilly, telling him they came from *London*, and were going towards the North of *England*: So, being balk'd in his Expectation of coming to *London*, along with them, he knew not what to do; but at last resolves to go along with them, hoping to meet something in his Way that might make his Journey pleasant; so tells them his Resolution to make one amongst them: But they, seeing a Man genteely dress'd petitioning for a poor Haymaker's Place, took him to be only in jest, and told him they

should

should  
as he th  
of his  
drove h  
said th  
their M  
he wou  
went w  
came,  
wanting  
a great  
very pe  
it only  
and so  
that ve  
a Fork  
his To  
a Man  
with w  
pleasan

Tom  
forming  
being a  
by his  
pleasan  
his M  
what v  
Lot to  
who, s  
asked h  
he the  
tion, t  
so struc  
Tom  
before  
being a  
his for

should be glad of such a Companion, if he spoke as he thought. He protested to them the Sincerity of his Intention, telling them his Misfortunes drove him to such low Circumstances. They then said they should be very glad to serve him, and that their Master would be in the Field by-and-by, and he would hire him, for he wanted Hands: So he went with them, and tarried till the old Farmer came, who, finding a well-dressed young Fellow wanting an Employment of that kind, asked him a great many Questions, which *Tom* answered very pertinently: The Farmer, therefore, taking it only as a Frolick, was willing not to balk him, and so hired him, saying, he might go to work that very Day, if he would; but *Tom*, wanting a Fork, told him, That, as soon as he could get his Tools in Readiness, he would come; so hires a Man to go to the next Town to buy him one, with which, as soon as bought, he falls to work very pleasantly.

*Tom* went with them from Place to Place, conforming himself to their Customs in every Point, being a very merry Companion, and much beloved by his Fellows: His present Life became much pleasanter than his former, never inquiring after his Master, or Country Girl, nor did he know what was become of them. At last, it fell to his Lot to be hired by the Farmer he then worked for; who, seeing him a tractable, brisk young Fellow, asked him whether he would be his Servant; for he then wanted one. *Tom*, after a little Hesitation, told him he should be glad of such a Master; so struck a Bargain, and hired himself for a Year.

*Tom* had not been there much above half a Year, before *Quarll's* Wife came down thither, who, being a genteel *London* Madam, reminded him of his former Intrigues, and raised in him an Inclina-

tion for her ; but, being in so humble a Station, he dared not attack the haughty Dame, till he might find a favourable Opportunity ; and so took all Occasions to oblige her, and was better respected by her than any of the others, she often saying, that that Fellow had a certain *Je-ne-scai quoi* in him which at once claimed Love and Respect. *Tom*, understanding this, thought Time would certainly bring about his Purpose ; which not long after happened in this Manner.

*Tom*, during her Alteration of Temper, had more Liberty of Converse than before ; and often diverted her with entertaining Stories ; and one Day, being alone with her, opened to her the whole Series of his past Fortunes and Misfortunes, which she heard with great Attention and Pleasure ; for *Tom* had never before discovered himself to any ; but, thinking to gain Credit with this Gentlewoman, made her only privy to it. When *Tom* was gone, she began to reflect on the Fellow's Dexterity ; and, believing him well skilled in all kind of Adventures, thought he might be a fit Instrument for her Escape, and resolved to advise with him about it : Accordingly the next Day took an Opportunity to call him to her again, when she was alone, desiring him to divert her with some of his merry Tales, telling him she was then very melancholy. Madam, says *Tom*, I am sorry I should find you melancholy ; but I'll do all I can to please you. Ay, says she, if you knew the Occasion of my Melancholy, you would pity me, as well as be sorry ; but you cannot be ignorant what a Prisoner I am made here, how constantly I am attended, and have scarce any thing but Brutes to speak to : I can assure you that this Usage is enough to make me as mad as the People take me to be ; for I never was brought up in this Manner, which

my

my Husband knows ; it is only a Contrivance of his to keep me here a close Prisoner, if possible ; but I'll deceive him : for if a Woman's Invention can find any means to escape this cursed Place, he shall be sure to see me in *London* quickly, and that to his great Mortification.

The sly Rogue heard her very quietly, and thought he might now have his desired Ends : So tells her she should be released that very Night, if she pleased, and he himself would accompany her to *London* ; for he longed to be there again : She was glad to hear him say so ; and asked by what means he intended to convey her thence. O Lord ! says he, easy enough ; I'll tell you how : I'll take a Ladder, and set it against your Window, and so come into your Room, and take your Cloaths, and every thing you have a mind to send to *London*, and carry them to a particular Acquaintance of mine ; then I'll come back and fetch you, and conduct you to the next Town, which is not above five or six Miles off, and stay there for the Stage-Coach, and so both go to *London* together. The Gentlewoman, willing to get her Liberty at any rate, agreed to the Proposal, only desiring another Day to look after all her Things, and pack them up conveniently, because she would not hurry herself, lest they should mistrust, and stop her Journey.

Tom consented to what she said, and wished for the approaching Time ; which being come, and all Things in Readiness, he brings the Ladder, and mounts up towards the Room ; while she as readily delivers him, from the Window, all her Baggage ready packed up ; which Tom takes, and carries away, and presently returns to fetch the Gentlewoman ; who, overjoyed to think herself freed from that tiresome Place, gets out of Window, and began to descend the Ladder ; but, being over-



eager, and not used to Enterprizes of that Kind, her Foot slipped, and down she tumbles, Ladder and all; which *Tom* seeing, knew the Consequence, and ran away as he could, leaving Mrs. *Quarll* to get up by herself; for the Ladder, in tumbling, broke the Windows where the old Farmer lay, and made an horrid Noise, so that it scared the good Man out of his Sleep, who got up to see what was the Matter; and, perceiving the Gentlewoman's Window open, and a Fellow running cross the Yard, cries out, *Murder! Thieves! Thieves!* which alarmed the whole Family; some getting Pitchforks, some Pokers; some one thing, some another, in order to scare the Thieves; but the old Man, with his Fowling-piece in Hand, like a noble Commander, led the Van, searching all his House over for Thieves, and to see what he had lost, carefully looking into every Hole and Corner, not daring to advance too fast, for fear of a Surprise; and coming to Mrs. *Quarll*'s Room, whose Window he had teen open, calls to her a long Time; but, hearing no Answer, fancied she was murdered, and therefore breaks open the Door, and searches the Room; but there was no Mrs. *Quarll* to be found; they stared one at another, not knowing what to think. However, when they had examined all the House, they boldly sallied into the Yard to hunt the Thieves there; and looking about, they perceived something under the Ladder, which looked like Womens Cloaths; so taking it up, they pulled from under it a real Woman, something like Mrs. *Quarll*; and, looking more narrowly, perceived it to be the very same individual Person, almost dead with the Fright, and the Bruises she had received.

And now their greatest Wonder was, how she came thither: The old Man said, he believed that

some

ome Th  
prevent  
threw he  
Wifeacr  
I am sur  
adds he,  
herself o  
be he yo  
they disp  
the ough  
Care tak  
and ther  
good old  
got her t  
After  
know w  
general  
dered w  
that Ni  
lieved h  
hearting  
there al  
How do  
me, or t  
comes h  
soon as  
Things  
the Adv  
be certa  
solved t  
away, a  
Mrs.  
confesse  
upon he  
be mur  
only th  
Death.

Some Thieves had gotten into the House, and, to prevent her crying, had stopped her Mouth, and threw her out of the Window. But, says another Wifeacre, how came she to have her Cloaths on? I am sure she ought to have been a-bed. Now, adds he, I believe the Devil tempted her to throw herself out at Window; and that must certainly be he you see run cross the Yard so swiftly. Thus they disputed a long Time, but at last agreed, that she ought to be carried to Bed again, and have Care taken of her: and so carried her up-stairs; and then went to finish their Search, while the good old Woman and her Daughter undressed her, got her to Bed, and sat up with her all that Night.

After all was finished, the old Man, willing to know what Quantity of Men he had lost, calls a general Muster; and, finding *Tom* missing, wondered where he was got to, asking if he lay at home that Night: They told him, No; but they believed he was gone a Sweethearting. A Sweethearting! says the old Fellow; well, let him be there always; for he shall never come hither again: How do I know but he has sent the Thieves to rob me, or that he is one of them himself? If he ever comes hither, I'll turn him about his Business as soon as I see him. But *Tom* understood better Things than to come thither again; for he knew the Adventurer would be blown, and then he should be certainly discarded with Disgrace; so was resolved to make the best of what he had got; went away, and never was heard of again.

Mrs. *Quarll*, as soon as come to her Speech, confesses the whole Intrigue, and lays the Blame upon her Husband; saying, he sent her thither to be murdered; and now he had his desired End, only that she was the unhappy Cause of her own Death. The old Man, as soon as he knew the

Matter perfectly, writes to her Husband a full Account of the whole Story; telling him he was in a fair way to lose his Wife; and that, if it should so happen, he had no Occasion to send for his Wife's Cloaths, for she had before lost them; and tells him by what Means. *Quarll*, as soon as he had the Letter, was very much troubled at his Wife's Folly; but resolved, if she recovered, she should tarry some time without Cloaths, which he knew would be Punishment enough to her Pride: So writes back to them, that they should take all possible Care to restore her to her Health, and likewise to prevent any thing of that kind for the future; telling them, that in a little Time he would send her some Cloaths, and make them Amends for their Trouble.

Mrs. *Quarll*, in about a Month, began to be upon the mending Hand; which her Husband being informed of, resolved to make her stay another Month without Cloaths, which he knew would be a greater Punishment than the other Month of Sickness. But here he was mistaken; for it was almost three Months before she perfectly recovered; who, finding that, before that time, her Husband had sent her some fine new Cloaths, was, in great measure, reconciled to him; and resolved, during her Stay there, to be much more easy in her Mind than before.

The good People, whom she had often scared with her outrageous Passion, were very glad to see her so calm, and took that Opportunity to represent to her the Happiness of her Condition; being well attended, and as well provided with all Necessaries, free from that Subjection she might be under, if with her Husband, whose cross and ill Humours she would be obliged to bear with: besides twenty  
other

other Vexations incumbent to a married Life, from which she was screened by his being from her.

The old Woman's wife Remonstrances, being backed with the sudden Arrival of a fresh Supply of several Sorts of choice Drams, as also the ensuing Quarter's Money for her Board, and the Season rendering the Country extremely agreeable, made her patiently submit to continue there till the Fall of the Leaf; against which Time she would contrive some Way or other to go, if her Husband did not come for her.

But Quarll, who ever since her being in the Country, had enjoyed the uncontrouled Pleasures of a single Life, having no Mind to interrupt them by her Presence, took care to secure her there; sending her Guardians now-and-then fresh Charge to be watchful over her, and a small Present to encourage them to it.

But surly Fate, who ever was averse to his Happiness, suggests a new Interruption thereto. Quarll, having given over House-keeping, happened to come and live at a Mantua-maker's of vast Business, and reputed worth Money. She was a single Woman, pretty handsome, but intolerable proud and conceited; which was the Cause of her being still unmarried, thinking herself too good for any Tradesman, or any thing below a Gentleman; which seeing no Prospect to get, being courted by none, she became a general Man-hater: But Quarll, who was an handsome young Man, and of a genteel Employ, tho' not a Gentleman, coming to lodge at her House, reconciled her to the Sex. In a little Time, and made her change her Resolution never to marry, heartily wishing he would court her: Therefore, by her more than common Attendance for a Lodger, did all she could to give him Invitation, but all to little Success; for



*Quarll*, who had been already twice incumbered in the troublesome State of Matrimony, and but lately rid of his last Plague, had no mind to venture any more; so did not answer her Expectation; but her Love increasing daily, without being taken Notice of, she was obliged to declare it to an old Gentlewoman, who lodged in the next Room to him; who, having doubtless been in the same Condition, was, by Experience, capable to give her Advice.

The old Gentlewoman (as 'tis peculiar to them, when past the Sport themselves, to love to promote it in others) took upon her the Management of that Affair; and from that Time watched the Opportunity of speaking to him, which was only in the Morning before he went out, or at Night when he came home, being abroad all the Day beside: So, having resolved upon it, the next Morning she leaves her own Door open, which was opposite to his, waiting his coming out, to invite him to a Dish of Chocolate, which she had ready for that Purpose.

Having, according to her Desire, got him into her Chamber, as he was drinking his Dish, she feigns a Fit of Laughing. You wonder, said she, what 'tis I thus laugh at; but, I dare say, you'll laugh as well as I, when you know: Why, our Man-hater is in Love at last; in Love up to her Ears, as sure as you are alive. Our Man-hater, Madam! says he; who is that? Don't you know? replied she: Why, our Landlady, who has refused so many fine Offers: Lord, how happily might that Woman have married! She might have rode in her Coach Years ago; but no Man was good enough for Madam: This had such a Fault, and that another: In short, none could please her: 'Tis true, indeed, she is very deserving:

The

The worst Part of her is in the Sight, and that you know is not disagreeable ; but did you see what a fine Body she has, you would be ready to run mad for her : Surely she has the finest Leg and Foot that ever Woman went on ; and, for a Skin, she may challenge the whole Sex : In short, she is fit for a King's Embraces. She has several good Properties besides ; and one above all, which perhaps you'll say is the principal ; she has Money, and a great deal : Well, that will soon be disposed of, I dare say ; I wish I knew on whom : Sure it must be some Angel ; for I have heard her find Fault with very handsome Men that have address'd to her : Pray, did you ever observe any Man to come here ? He must be the Person ; for all her Concerns are with Women. Indeed, replied *Quarll*, I never take Notice who comes : Besides, I am seldom at home ; so have not an Opportunity to make Observations. But I have, said she ; and made it my Business to mind ; yet never saw any Man in this House since I came, but you : Suppose you should be he at last ? O Madam, there is no Danger, answered *Quarll* ; she, who has refused so many rich Matches, will hardly set her Mind on a poor Singing-master. How do you know that ? replied the old Lady : Love comes by Fancy, and Marriage by Fate, and it may be yours to have her : So I would have you cultivate her Love, which I could almost swear you possess ; you will find it worth your while : Here is an agreeable Woman in an extraordinary good Business, a House well furnished, and I'll warrant Money-bags well filled : Now, if you are disposed to make your Fortune, here is a fair Opportunity. *Quarll* was sadly puzzled what Answer to make. His present Circumstance prompts him to sooth what his Condition obliges him to deny : His Business slackens, and

his Charges no-wise lessen : His Income is dubious, and Expences certain ; the most prevailing Arguments to embrace the Offer : But then a strong Obstacle starts up ; a Wife : But she is out of the Way, and as good as dead, whilst her Living is paid for, which this proposed Marriage will enable him to do, though other Business failed. That Objection being removed, his Answer was, He feared that Happiness would be above his aspiring to ; which being according to the Mediatress's Wish, she promised him her Assistance. So he took his Leave, and went about his daily Affairs, leaving the Management of that to her ; who immediately went to inform the amorous Landlady of her Success.

*Quarll* being returned at Night, the old Lady, pursuant to the Business she had taken in Hand, follows him to his Chamber, with the joyful News, that she had, by her Landlady's blushing, discover'd what her Modesty would have concealed ; that he was the Man beloved ; and, therefore, she would not have him delay his being made happy : To which he answered, As she had been the first Cause of his Happiness, he left the Accomplishment thereof to her Direction. Well, then, said she, if I have the ordering of it, it shall be done next Sunday, as being, of all the Week, the most blessed Day. And so bid him good Night.

The old Gentlewoman, being made sole Directress of that Affair, was very diligent in the Accomplishment thereof ; so had them married on the Day she had proposed. The Business was done privately, but the Joy it produced could not be concealed : Everybody read Bride in the new-married Wife's Face ; so that Greetings daily filled the House ; which, for a Month, was a Residence for Mirth ; and, during the Space of a Year, the Seat of Happiness ; Peace kept the Door, and Plenty attended them. But

churlish.

churlish Fate, which ever persecuted him, would not permit that happy State to continue; and, the more to aggravate his Loss, makes Love, the chief Author of his Bliss, now the principal Instrument of his Sorrow; Jealousy, the greatest Plague that can befall a married Life, infects his Wife. She is upon Thorns whilst he is absent, and uneasy when present, with the Fears of what he had done abroad: A discontented Mind often urges the Utterance of vexatious Words, and breeds Jarrings, Enemies to Peace; which, being often disturbed, leaves her Abode, which is immediately taken up by Strife, and is commonly attended with Ruin, the decreed Influence of poor Quarll's surly Fate. Business falling off from both their Hands, makes them negligent of the little they have: The Husband diverts his Cares abroad, whilst the Wife drinks away her Sorrow at home. Thus Money growing scant, Credit must be pledg'd; which, being not redeem'd, exposes the Owner to Disgrace, which is commonly the poor Man's Lot.

The Mercer and Silkman, with whom his Wife dealt before she was married, having received Money but once since her Marriage, and seeing her Discontent, imagin'd her Husband (who appeared something too airy for one of her sedate Years) was the Occasion thereof, by his extravagant spending what she, with much Care and Frugality, had saved, arrested him, without giving him Notice; lest, being warned, he should get away what she might have left, and then abscond.

Quarll, who till then had kept secret his being in the Guards, where he continued, to screen him from those Debts his eloped Wife might contract, is now obliged to let it be known, to keep himself out of Goal.



His proud Wife, who thought Men of the best and genteelest Trades inferior to her Merits, seeing herself at last married to one, whose Station was looked upon to be as odious as that of a common Bailiff, fell into such a Passion that it cast her into a violent Fit; from which being recovered, she flies out of the House in a great Fury, twearing by all that was good, She would no more live with a Foot Soldier; so left him in a sad Confusion: Yet he staid in the House, hoping she would, when cooler, consider of it, and be reconciled.

But great was his Surprize, when next Morning, instead of his Wife's coming according to Expectation, a Judgment is served upon the Goods of the House, at the Suit of an Upholsterer; so the House being intirely unfurnished, he was obliged to seek new Lodgings, where he continued a full Quarter, without hearing of his Wife.

*Quarll*, hoping his Wife had left him in good earnest, indulges himself with the Thoughts of being a third time delivered from the greatest Incumbrance that can involve a Man; wondering how he could so often fall into the same Snare: Three Wives, said he, in three Years! and every one equal Plagues, though of a different Nature! The first a Whore, of whom I was most luckily rid by Accident: The second a proud, lazy, indolent Creature; she by Stratagem is secured: And the third a conceited jealous Wretch; to her Ostentation I owe my Deliverance. Well, now I am once more free, I'll take care how I hamper myself again: So makes a strong Resolution, let what would happen, to live single from that Time ever after.

But his Resolution, though ever so strong, cannot avert Fate's irrevocable Decree: A fourth Wife is allotted him, which will bring upon him more Vexation

Vexation  
through  
his Ear  
pardy.

One  
and th  
vern,  
(who  
Voice  
portun  
who v  
dow:  
earnest

*Qu*  
Man,  
upon  
sidera  
alread  
super  
a less  
wishe  
ner,  
Time  
agree  
Gent  
Wor  
well  
less  
a be  
here  
who  
havi  
Col  
Mat  
G  
but  
Ear

Vexation and Trouble, than he has yet gone through ; his Peace will not only be broken, and his Ease disturbed, but his Life must be in Jeopardy.

One Evening that he was diverting his Colonel, and the rest of his Club, with singing at the Tavern, as he usually did once a Week, the Landlady (who was then in Company) much praised his Voice and Skill : The Gentlemen took that Opportunity to propose a Match between *Quarll*, who went for a Batchelor, and her, being a Widow : All the Company liked the Proposal, and earnestly urged on the Match.

*Quarll*, being a brisk, handsome, genteel young Man, which Qualifications have a vast Ascendant upon the Sex, especially on Widows, made a considerable Impression upon the Hostess ; who, being already above Forty, was willing to intermix her supernumerary Years with those of an Husband of a lesser Age : So, turning to Jest what she heartily wished to be in Earnest, answers, in a joaking Manner, that Mr. *Quarll* doubtless had, before that Time, made a better Choice ; so would hardly agree to their Proposal. A better Choice ! said the Gentlemen, I deny that : Here's a handsome jolly Woman, a noble House well-accustomed, a Cellar well stocked with good Wine, and Bags, doubtless well filled with Money : I say he cannot make a better Choice, nor shall he make any other ; so here's to its good Success : Thus he drinks to her, who, in a joking Way, puts it about. The Glass having been round, Now, Mr. *Quarll*, said the Colonel, let us have a Love-Song to conclude the Matter.

*Quarll*, who thought the Gentlemen had been but in Jest, in his Heart wished it could turn to Earnest. The Notion of a good Establishment, and  
Prospect

Prospect of a considerable Advantage, having blanch'd over those great Obstacles his present low Circumstances, and elevated Condition, made him overlook, he did all he could to forward what had been proposed : So having, according to Request, given the Landlady a Love-Song, he goes and salutes her with an hearty Kiss ; who, smiling, asked him, Whether he thought she was to be purchased with a Song ? To which he replied, the Song was only to express the Thoughts of his Heart, which he offered to purchase her Love. Indeed, said she, in a pleasant Manner, I do not know what your Thoughts may be ; but I never heard more agreeable Expressions. Well then, Widow, said these Gentlemen, you cannot, in Gratitude and good Manners, but answer them kindly. Indeed, Gentlemen, said she, I can say no more, but that they are mighty pretty Words, and charmingly sung. Well then, replied the Colonel, I'll say the rest for you. The Lover having expressed his Passion in so soft Terms, and engaging a Way, you cannot, without doing Violence to your Good-nature, deny him what he requests in so melting a Manner ; nor shall ; I say the Word : Which was confirmed by all the Company. To which she making no Answer, it was taken for granted. So the Marriage being concluded on, the next Day was fixed upon for the Performance thereof ; being resolved not to adjourn till it was over, they bespoke a splendid Supper, and so spent the Night merrily.

The Wedding was kept all the Week, during which Time, every Gentleman was profuse in his Expences, for an Encouragement to the new-married Couple, whose Trade increased daily.

Their prosperous Beginning seemed to promise an happy Life, living in Love and Peace at home, and being in good Repute and Credit abroad ; but the

the same Fate, which all along haunted poor Quarll, still at his Heels : His Bliss was but a Blast. His eloped Wife unfortunately happened to go by as he was going out : She had him immediately in her Eye, which as speedily conveyed him to her Heart : The Addition which a charming new Suit of Cloaths he then had on, made to his natural Handsomeness, put out of her Mind the Cause of that Disdain she had conceived for him, and turns it into a more passionate Love than ever : She cannot live any longer from him ; she must have him with her at any rate, and will not rest till she finds out his Lodgings ; from whence she resolves to wash all Sorrow away with her Tears, and settle him again in her Arms. So she strait goes to the Tavern she saw him come out of, supposing it might be a House he constantly used, on purpose to inquire where he lodged.

The new Wife, who was then in the Bar, to whom she applied, perceiving in her some sort of Disorder, was very inquisitive to know her Business ; in which the poor Woman refusing to satisfy her, she told her that he lived there, and that she was his Wife ; and therefore the fittest to know her Concern. At these most dreadful Words, she falls, like one Thunder-struck, on the Ground, deprived of all her Senses ; and, for a considerable Time, lies as though bereft of Life.

This dull Scene turns the new Wife's Passion into Commiseration ; and she pities that Misfortune which in her Mind she before condemned as a Crime. This, said she, is a true Sign of Love, which a Harlot is not capable of : I cannot blame her for loving him, but rather condole her Misfortune. So, having ordered fair Water and Hartshorn Drops to be brought, gave her some in a Glass of Water, which in a small time fetched her  
a little



a little to Life; who, recovering, cried out, Had I not been so bewitched as to go from him, he would not have left me. These Words in a Moment turned the officious Condoler into a revengeful Rival, who immediately imagined she had lately lived with him as a Mistress, and, doubtless, would endeavour to do the same again: So, giving her Hand (which she kindly held before) a scornful Toss from her, Why, you vile Woman, said she, would you have him to live for ever in Whoredom? You judge me wrong, Madam, replied the poor afflicted Woman; I am his lawful Wife: So produces her Certificate (which she happened to have about her :) Which caused almost as much Disorder in the Beholder, as she herself was lately in.

Having recovered her Speech, which the late Surprise had obstructed, she asked her, in a violent Passion, Why she had been so base as to give him the Opportunity to come and cheat her, by her leaving him; for *she* was his Wife also? To which she answered, That she could justify her going from him, tho' indeed she had great Provocation, he not proving the Man she took him to be. What! replied she in the Bar, was he not Man enough for you? I think you are very hard to please: However, since the Deceit made you leave him, why do you disturb yourself about him? He has not deceived me; unless it be in having a Wife before: But as you left him of your own accord, he had no more to do with you. No! replied she, in a Passion; but he shall find, and so shall you, that I have to do with him: So went away.

It being then about Noon, his usual Time to come home from Market, she went into a Public-House opposite to the Tavern, there to wait his Return, which was a little after. As soon as she saw him, she gave him a Call over.

The sudden and unexpected Sight of the only  
 obstacle to the Happiness he then enjoyed, was  
 most terrible shocking to him: He wished he had  
 met with Death to have missed her; but to no pur-  
 pose: She had him in her Eye, and was fully re-  
 solved to have him in her Arms ere she went; and  
 as he did not come as quick at her Call as her Im-  
 patience requires, she attempts to go over to him;  
 but *Quarll*, who knew her fiery Temper, was afraid  
 she should break out in a Passion in the Street;  
 which would have exposed him, and brought it to  
 his new Wife's Knowledge, being near home: So  
 hastens over to the House she was in, to prevent her  
 coming; and, judging his beginning to upbraid her  
 with her Elopement would, in some measure, mo-  
 derate her railing at him, he tells her, as he enters  
 the Room, I hope, Madam, you have, by this  
 Time, found a Man more to your Mind. This  
 was sufficient to provoke a milder Temper to re-  
 proach him with his adulterous Marriage, of which  
 he was too certain; hers is but a Fault, but his a  
 Crime: But as Reproaches are not proper Means  
 to advance a Reconciliation, which was her Intent,  
 he bridles her Passion, and forces her Nature to a  
 submission; so throws herself at his Feet, and falls  
 weeping; owning she had committed a Fault, for  
 which she heartily repented, and promised to atone  
 by her future Behaviour; calling Heaven to witness  
 her Chastity during her most unhappy Separation.

*Quarll*, being of a compassionate Temper, was  
 soon made flexible by her Tears: So takes her up  
 by the Hand, who as soon fell into his Arms, un-  
 capable of speaking for weeping; but *Quarll*, who  
 was in haste to be gone, being waited for at Home,  
 being about his time of Dinner, complied with the  
 poor afflicted Woman's crying and sobbing, whose  
 chief Request was, that he would only see her home  
 that

that time ; which he presently granted, to be quit of her : So ordered a Coach to be called.

His new Wife at home, being uneasy at his staying beyond his Time, came to the Door to look whether she could see him come. At that most unlucky Time he was handing his other Wife into the Coach ; which she unfortunately spying, ran over, as swift as a Hawk flies after his Prey, and pulls him back by the Lappet of his Coat, as he was stepping into the Coach after her : The Disorder this second Surprise put him in, obliged him to go again into the House he just came out of, where she immediately followed him, raving and railing as much as the Provocation and her Passion did allow, leaving in the Coach his former Wife ; who, by that second terrible Surprise, was again struck speechless, and like one bereft of Sense.

The Coachman, having waited some time, being impatient, calls in the House, desiring the Gentleman to make haste, or else to allow him for waiting ; at which, the new Wife comes out in a violent Passion, and bids him be gone, for he was not wanted. What shall I do with the Gentlewoman in my Coach ? said he ; you had best take care of her ; she is not well ; or tell me where I shall carry her. Carry her to the Devil, an you will, said she ; and so went in. You may carry her there, replied the surly Coachman ; you best know the Way : So goes to the Coach, and shakes her 'till she came to herself : Then, taking her up in his Arms, I am bid to carry you to the Devil, said he ; but I believe you are able to go yourself ; so I'll set you down here, that you may take your own Time. Having set her down, he then drives away. There being a Milliner's Shop just by, she goes in, desiring leave to sit awhile, 'till she was able to go. She had scarce been there three Minutes, but she sees her Husband

handing

anding his new Wife over, very complaisantly ; which so exasperated her, that she fully resolved upon revenge ; chusing he should be hanged, rather than her Rival should enjoy him : So went directly, and took out a Warrant, which she immediately served, and had him before a Justice of the Peace, who committed him forthwith to *Newgate*.

The following Sessions happening to be extraordinary great, by the vast Number of Criminals, his Trial, and several more, were put off 'till the next ; so that he was confined at the Time he used to send the Money for his Wife's Board in the Country : And, not daring to employ any Acquaintance in that Affair, lest they should inquire into the Occasion of his sending that Money ; he desired one, who often came to visit a Prisoner, to do him that Favour ; which he readily promised, but did not perform : So that the People in the Country, who were used to be paid a Quarter beforehand, were a Quarter in Arrear : Which, with the Boarder's pressing importunity to come up to *London*, made them at last resolve upon it ; where being arrived, they immediately inquired after the unfortunate *Quarll*, whose Imprisonment they soon heard of, as also of the Cause thereof.

This did not a little exasperate the already sufficiently-provoked Inquisitress ; who, presently imagining, with good Reason, that his confining her in the Country was merely for that Intent, resolved to prosecute him according to the utmost Rigour of the Law ; wondering who that good Person was that had him apprehended : So went and consulted her Friends, who advised her not to let her Husband know of her being in Town till his Trial came on ; and then she should know the Prosecutor, and, at her own Discretion, back the Prosecution.

The



The mean Time, his first Wife, who had lately been dismissed (the Knight who kept her being not long since married to a vast Fortune) having heard of *Quarll's* being in *Newgate*, went strait to visit him. Her Grief and his Surprize at her coming stopp'd, for some time, the Utterance of both their Minds : At last *Quarll*, who had a just Reason to tax her as the Author of his present Misfortune, reproached her with her leaving him, which was the original Cause thereof. The innocent, yet guilty *Sally*, whose Inclination, Disposition, and Resolution, had been violated, related the dismal Account of her fatal Ravishment ; and pleaded her Cause with such a prevailing Eloquence, as newly kindled his former Love, and made him (tho' the Sufferer) give it on her Side.

Being thoroughly reconciled, and having spent some Hours in expressing both their Grievances, they at last parted, after a thousand cordial Embraces ; and as she was enabled, by the Settlement the Knight had made upon her, she supplied him with Money and Necessaries during his Confinement in *Newgate* ; and was with him constantly every Day, almost from Morning till Night ; and, when he was called upon his Trial, she attended in the Court, more concerned than if she herself had been arraigned.

The Sessions being commenced, he was first called to the Bar : His Indictment being read, he desired to be heard by his Counsel ; which was granted. The Deponent having proved her Marriage, required the Prisoner at the Bar should be obliged to live with her, or allow her a sufficient Maintenance, as being his first Wife ; at which she whom he kept in the Country starts up : That belongs to me, said she ; I am the first Wife : So produces her Certificate. A third Wife appearing,

*Startles*

startles both the Judges, and the Prisoner, who thought her secure.

*Sally*, who till then had been silent, seeing the Priority of Marriage so much pleaded for, thought it might be worth her while to claim it, being her Right, which she may chance to turn to the Prisoner's Advantage; so addressing to the Bench, My Lords, said she, I did not think to apply for Justice; but, seeing these Women contending for that which belongs to neither of them, I think myself obliged to claim my Right: I am the first Wife, and please your Lordships. How! a fourth Wife, and indicted out for two! said the Judges, in a great Surprise. Why, my Lords, replied an old surly Judge upon the Bench, if Truth be known, he has half a Score; I see it in his Looks: These smock-faced young Fellows are so admired by the Women, that they have not Power to refuse any thing. *Sally*, who thought to do the Prisoner Service, in taking the Privilege of first Wife into her own Hands, finding the Success of her good Intent quite reversed, heartily repented appearing, and would have withdrawn, but that the Judges told her she was now become the Prosecutrix, and was obliged to go on in the Prosecution. This caused such a Disorder in her, who imagined she should be the unfortunate Occasion of his being cast, that she was ready to swoon. *Quarll's* Counsel, perceiving her Disorder, imagined it might proceed from a Regret of the Mischief she had done; so put her in a Way to invalidate her Deposition: Now, Madam, said the Counsel, I very much question whether you can make your Assertion good: Pray produce your Certificate; you can do us no hurt else. *Sally*, overjoy'd to hear that, said, she had none; chusing to undergo the greatest Disgrace, rather than he should come to the least Hurt. I thought

as

as much, said the Counsel. Well, well, replied the  
 furly Judge, she may have lost it : Where was you  
 married, Child ? At *Chatham*, my Lord, I think,  
 answer'd she, very much discountenanced. At *Chatham*,  
 did you say ? reply'd the Counsel : I doubt  
 yours has been a Sailor's Wedding, over a Pot of  
 Drink ; a Man's Wife till the next Voyage, and any-  
 body's when he is gone. Your Lordships see how  
 the Case stands. Yes, yes, answered a Judge ; if  
 she is his first Wife that way, I dare say he is not her  
 first Husband, by many. So she was hissed out of  
 the Court. Then the Judge addressing to the next  
 Pretender, I hope, says he, yours will not prove a  
 Sailor's Wedding, as her's did. A Sailor's ! No, my  
 Lord, replied the second Wife ; I have Witnesses  
 enough to mine : My Lady *Firebrass*, with whom I  
 lived, and her two Daughters, saw me fairly married  
 in *St. Martin's Church*. How came it, said the  
 Judge, you did not sue him before he married the  
 third Wife ? You should have prevented his cheating  
 any other poor Woman. Why, my Lord, said she,  
 I knew nothing of it ; he kept me a Prisoner in the  
 Country, at this good Woman's House, where he  
 decoy'd me, under Pretence of being careful of me.  
 I must go into the Country, for a Month or two, to  
 take the Air ! but when he had me there, there he  
 kept me ever since, charging the People of the House  
 not to suffer me to come up to *London*, nor yet to go  
 out ; pretending I was mad, because I complained I  
 was not well. A very pretty Device ! replied the  
 old Judge. Yes, my Lord, cried out all the Women  
 in the Court (who were come in great Numbers to  
 hear a Trial about a Rape committed by a Qua-  
 ker upon a Maid of Fifty Years of Age) and a very  
 bad Precedent, if not severely punished : Should  
 this be suffered, a poor Wife will not dare to be  
 out

of Order, or complain, in hopes to be made  
uch of, for fear her Husband, under Colour of  
ving her the Pleasure of the Country Air, shall,  
hen he has got her there, confine her, and so  
arry whom he pleases at *London*.

The Judges, to quell their Clamour, were obliged  
call to them, and promise them it should be no  
ecedent; and that they might be sick at Will,  
d groan at their Pleasure, and also accept of their  
usband's Kindnesses when offered.

The Court being silenced, the Proceedings went  
: And several of the Judges having been spoken  
by some of *Quarll's* particular Friends, who  
ere related to some of them, they were more fa-  
urable in their Judgment, all but the old surly  
dge, with whom no Interest had been made.

The three Wives then present having proved  
eir Marriage, the Prisoner at the Bar was asked,  
What he had to say in his own Defence?

*Quarll*, who thought his Wife in the Country  
as secure from coming against him, not having  
ven his Council Instructions concerning her, was  
liged to plead himself: My Lords, said he, the  
st Deponent against me being run mad, and there-  
unfit for human Society, I was obliged to think  
some Retirement for her, as 'tis necessary for  
ople in her Case. Unfit for human Society! re-  
ed the second Wife, in a great Fury; and was  
ing on in the same Temper, but was bid to be  
ent, and he to proceed: So, my Lords, said he,  
proposed the Country, as the most pleasant and  
hole some Place, as also that which suited her In-  
position best, being always ambitious to imitate  
e Quality, who commonly go into the Coun-  
y in the Summer; which made her accept the  
ffer: There, my Lords, I boarded her with  
ry honest and sufficient People, in a handsome,

H

credi-



creditable and pleasant House: A pleasant House! reply'd she; a perfect Hovel. There, my Lords, I provided her every thing she could want or desire, as her Landlady, here present, can justify. His Council, who, by what he had said, had taken sufficient Hints to proceed, took the Plea out of his Hand, and went on: Ant please your Lordship, said he, since by her Madness—My Madness! said she, interrupting the Council: I desire, my Lords, this good Woman (with whom I have lived many Years) may be sworn, whether she in all that time, did see or discern the least Symptoms of Mad-ness in me. Indeed, replied the old Woman, I have often seen you in the Vapours; but I cannot say I ever saw you, what they say, raving mad, but once. My Lord, said the Prisoner, I beg this Letter, which she sent me a Week after she was there, may be read; and then your Lordships may judge whether I do her wrong.

Orders being given from the Bench, the Letter was read. The old Woman hearing her House so despised, *where a well-bred Dog would run mad, if kept in*; and then her Husband and herself compar'd to *Oxen and Cows*, was not a little displeased: My House, Madam, said the old Woman, is not so *dis-picable* neither, as that comes to: I'm sure there's hardly a better, or more convenient, within ten Miles round it. As for the Room you lay in, no Gentlewoman, in her right Senses, but would be contented with, especially in the Country; I must be oblig'd to side with your Husband there: And for my Husband and me to be reckon'd no better than Brutes, you have little Reason to say so; for no Woman can be used with more Humanity than you have been: and as for your being confined, you never were shut up any where, but always had the Liberty of walking about our Ground; only

indeed

Need I would not consent you should trudge to London, as you often did offer to do. The old Woman having done speaking, Quarll's Council brought it to the Bench, Whether the Prosecutrix ought to be accounted in her right Senses. The Judges having given their Opinion that she was frantic; the old Judge, being displeased at their answer, ask'd them, Whether a Man or Woman's being frantic (which but few in this Town are more than) do impower either to marry again; and if they will allow that, why did he marry a third? The second is not mad. The second, reply'd the Council, elop'd, my Lord, and was from her Husband half a Year; and 'tis to be question'd, whether she would ever have come near him, had she not accidentally found this Opportunity to trouble him. 'Tis a plain Case, my Lord, said another Judge, the Prisoner is guilty of the Crime he stands indicted for: Yet I don't see but that there is room for Favour. His Constitution perhaps may require a Woman for the Maintenance of his Health, and his Inclination is averse against vile Women: Besides, my Lord, we don't hear that he did cohabit or correspond with more than one at a Time; and never sought a Supply 'till he was destitute. In my Opinion, my Lord, he may be favoured a little. The ill-natur'd Judge told 'em very furlily, that the Fact was plain; and that he was try'd according to the Laws of his Country; and must expect to suffer the Penalty of those Laws: But he could see no Room for favour, unless his Majesty (*Charles the Second*) would graciously be pleas'd to shew it him; and it was intirely out of his own Power: So sums up the Evidences, and refers it to the Jury.

The Jury went out accordingly: and, after having stay'd some time, brought in their Verdict,

*Death.* Sally, who was just by, no sooner heard the terrible News, but fainted away, and was obliged to be carried out of Court: The three Wives likewise went away, upbraiding and reproaching one another with being the fatal Cause of losing their Husband, wishing one another never to be relieved by Man; and so parted: But Sally, as soon as recovered, went back to the Prisoner again, and staid with him till the Court broke up; and then was allowed a Coach to carry him to *Newgate*, and attended him there all that Night.

As soon as the Keepers came in the Morning, he calls for Pen, Ink, and Paper, which was brought him; and wrote the following Letter to his Colonel;

May it please your Honour,

**I** *AM* now under the terrible Sentence of Condemnation; I need not tell you upon what Account, my Case being too well known to the World already: but as you have bestowed so many particular Favours upon me hitherto, this emboldens me once more, in this my extreme Necessity, to rely upon your Goodness. 'Tis true, my Merit cannot lay Claim to the least Mark of your Esteem; but 'tis your Generosity prompts me to beg my Life at your Hands, which, if you preserve, shall always be devoted to your Service, by

Your unfortunate humble Servant,

PHILIP QUARLL,

As soon as he had finish'd he delivers it to his dear-beloved *Sally*, and desires her to carry the same to his Colonel: *Sally*, joyful to serve him, takes the Letter, and away she flies. Being come to the House, she delivers the Letter to the Colonel; who, having opened and read it, told her, That she might assure him, he would do all that lay in his Power to serve him: So *Sally*, expressing her Gratitude, retir'd to carry the News to her Husband: When she came to the Prison she found him reading very seriously, leaning upon his Hand, with Tears in his Eyes: She stood some time to look at him: but finding he never stirr'd his Head, nor moved his Eyes, she went softly up to him, and spoke to him: He no sooner heard her Voice, but he starts, and looks like one just awake from a Dream; and then burst into Tears, and could not speak a Word; which *Sally* seeing, could not forbear weeping; and fell upon his Neck, desiring him with all Tenderness to stop the Torrent; for she had some joyful News to tell him. What joyful News, says he, can you bring a Man under my wretched Circumstances? Can any thing elevate the Mind whom Heaven itself has contrived to depress? Am not I the very Out cast and Scorn of Providence? Have not I been unfortunate from my Infancy? And why will you still add to my Misery; 'tis you that now make me wretched: Had you not so compassionately assisted me in this my dismal Calamity with so much Tenderness, I then willingly should have left this hateful World, without thinking of you: But why must I make you the wretched Partner of my Misfortunes? 'Tis that adds to my Uneasiness. O that I had not seen you in these my last Moments! *Sally*, interrupting him, said, come, talk not of last Moments; you may yet enjoy many happy Years;



your Colonel has promised to use his utmost Endeavours to preserve your Life. I don't flatter myself with any thing of that kind, says he, but if such a Thing should happen, I am fully resolved not to tarry long in *England*, which has brought upon me so many dire Mishaps.

The Colonel was as good as his Word; for he lov'd *Quarll* extreamly well: And therefore, as soon as *Sally* was gone, he orders his Coach to be got ready, and away he posts to my Lord *Danby*, who had a great Influence at Court at that Time, and who was his particular Friend. When he came thither, his Lordship was not stirring; so he waited till he got up; who, as soon as come down, cries out, so Colonel, what brings you here so soon? Did you come to breakfast with me; the Colonel seeing him so facetious and pleasant, told him his Message. My Lord, as soon as he heard it, answered, that upon his Honour, he certainly would grant his Request; and made him stay to breakfast with him.

As soon as Breakfast was over, he took his Leave of his Lordship, and away he comes to bring the Tidings to *Quarll*, whom he found alone, *Sally* having just left him. The Colonel told him, he was sorry to see him there, with other Compliments usual in such Cases; and related to him the Success he had with my Lord *Danby*: So desired him to be of good chear. *Quarll* fell at his Feet, and expressed his Gratitude in the most thankful Terms imaginable; telling him, his Life should always be at his Service. His Colonel, raising him up, told him he was very well satisfied; and, after a little more Conversation, left him.

*Sally*, in the mean Time, was not idle; for she went and bought a rich Piece of Plate, and presented it to the Recorder, that he might favour

*Quarll*

*Quarll* i  
desired  
down, I  
my Lor  
cious Pa  
great J  
*Quar*  
not to  
*Sally*,  
made a  
voured  
finding  
pany h  
wretch  
Misery  
where-  
the K  
the M  
*Qu*  
Seas,  
does,  
the Sh  
this e  
cordin  
agree  
Talk  
ance,  
to his  
dres  
than  
Acco  
and l  
Goo  
supp  
App  
well  
adds

*Quarll* in his Report to his Majesty; which had the desired Effect: For, when the dead Warrant came down, he was excluded: and in a few Day's after, my Lord *Danby* procured his Majesty's most gracious Pardon; which his Colonel brought him with great Joy.

*Quarll* being discharg'd out of *Newgate*, resolv'd not to tarry long in *England*; and told his beloved *Sally*, that he must now leave her, for he had made a Vow not to tarry in *Britain*. She endeavoured to dissuade him from his Intentions; but, finding it to no Purpose, desired she might accompany him. He asked her, why she desired to be wretched, telling her, he was doom'd to perpetual Misery: But she was resolutely bent to follow him where-ever he went; and accordingly sold what the Knight had settled upon her, in order to carry the Money with her.

*Quarll* hearing of a Ship bound for the *South Seas*, which in her Return was to touch at *Barbadoes*, the Captain of her having been first Mate of the Ship to which *Quarll* had formerly belonged; this encourag'd him to venture the Voyage. Accordingly, he went to the Commander, in order to agree with him about it. The Captain, after some Talk, began to call to mind their former Acquaintance, but wondered to see him so much altered as to his Condition; *Quarll* being very handsomely dress'd, and his Behaviour much better polished than formerly: So desired him to give him an Account how this strange Alteration had happened, and by what means he came to this good Fortune. Good Fortune! do you call it? says *Quarll*; I suppose then you look upon Men by their outward Appearance: But, did you know the World as well as I do, you would judge the contrary. Now, adds he, I'll give you a short Account of my past

H 4 Life;

Life; and then I'll leave you to say whether I am not rather the perfect Scorn and Mock of Fortune: So related to him his past Misfortunes; which *Quarll* told him in so moving a Manner, that it almost drew Tears from the Captain's Eyes. As soon as he had made an End, well, says the Captain, I thought that my Way of Living brought upon me more Troubles than Land-men are subject to! for, since I saw you, I have been shipwreck'd twice; once upon the Coast of *Guinea*, where I lost the Ship and Cargo, and but five Men sav'd; the other Time, homeward bound from the *East-Indies*, a violent Storm arose, and drove us upon the Coasts of *France*, where, with great Difficulty we cast Anchor, in order to refit our Ship, which was very much damag'd in the late Storm: But about twelve o'Clock the same Night we came thither, a most violent Hurricane blew in upon us, broke our Cables and drove us ashore; where again I lost the Ship and Cargo, but all the Men sav'd: Thus I think I have been unfortunate; but since they are past never think of them: We shall have a pleasant Voyage; and as you say you have a Mind to reside at *Barbadoes*, where I must touch in my Return, I'd have you lay out your Money in the Woolen Manufacture, and Cutlery-ware, which are very good Commodities in those Parts. *Quarll* thank'd him for his Advice, and parted with him.

Away then he goes to *Sally*, and told her what he had been doing, and whither he intended to go. *Sally* answer'd, what was his Pleasure should be hers; and that she would be a Partner in his Fortunes and Misfortunes, go whither he would. So *Quarll* went and bought the Goods which the Captain advis'd him to, and sent them on board; and soon after follow'd with himself and Wife.

They

They had not been long at Sea, before his darling Sally fell sick and dy'd, to his inexpressible Grief; wishing ten thousand times he had dy'd with her. He began to be extreme melancholy, took no rest, and would eat no Victuals. The Captain was afraid that he would die also; and did all he could to divert him; but was a long Time before he could bring him to his former Temper.

They sail'd on with a Side-wind for the Space of a Month; tho', it changing full in their Teeth, and very high withal, oblig'd them to cast Anchor, in order to lie by till the Wind did serve; but seeing themselves made upon by a Pirate, they were obliged to weigh their Anchor, and make the best of their Way before the Wind, in order to avoid being taken by those Infidels, who pursued them from four of the Clock on *Friday* Morning, 'till ten at Night the following *Sunday*; at which time there arose a Storm; the Sky look'd very black, the Wind being at North-west, and Clouds began to rise and move towards them, having hung all the Morning in the Horizon: So that they took in their Top-sails, and furl'd their Main-sail: The Sea ran very short, and broke in upon their Deck: However, they put right before the Wind, and sailed so for three Weeks, when they made *Cape Horne*: They had no sooner got round the Cape, but the Wind veer'd to the South, and it fell flat calm; which continu'd for two Days, when the Wind sprung up at South-west, and they scudded before the Wind very swift, and made an Island whose Name none of them knew, the Ship having never been the Coast before; but there they found Wood, Water, and Herbs of several sorts, some Seals and Sea-fowls. Here they refresh'd themselves for four Days; and then weigh'd Anchor, the Wind being fair at full South, and traded at several Ports on the Coast of



*Peru, Chili, and Mexico.* From Port *Aquapulco* they sailed, having a fresh Breeze, at N. N. E. They had not sailed above one Day, before the Wind veered to South-west, and blew a violent Gale of Wind; and there being a great Sea, so that their Ship took in a great deal of Water, the Wind continuing two Days increasing to a very great Storm, which held for one Day and two Nights more; during which Time they perceived themselves near some Rocks. The Storm rather increasing, and it growing dark, they despaired of saving the Ship; and as the Main-yard could not lower, the Ship's Tackling being disordered by the Violence of the Storm; *Quarll*, being bold and active, took a Hatchet which tumbled about the Deck, and ran up the Shrowds, in order to cut down what stoppt the working of the Main-yard; but, by that time he was got up, there came a Sea which dash'd the Ship to Shatters against the Rock; and with the Violence of the Shock, flung *Quarll*, who was astride upon the Main-yard on the Top of the Rock; where, having the good Fortune to fall in a Clift, he was hindered from being washed back again into the Sea, and drowned, as every-body were that belonged to the Ship.

*Quarll*, in a dismal Condition, remained the succeeding Night in the Clift, being continually beaten with the dashing-back of the Sea, and being both bruised and numb'd, pull'd off his Cloaths which were dropping wet, and spread them in the Sun; and being ever-fatigued, lays himself down on the smoothest Place of the Rock he could find, being quite spent with the Hardship he had undergone, and slept while his Cloaths were drying.

His Sleep, tho' very profound, was not refreshing: The Danger he had been lately in, so ran in his Mind, that grim Death was ever before his

Eyes; which constantly disturbed his rest: But Nature, who wanted Repose, would be supplied, tho' it be broken. Having slept a few Hours, he awakes almost as much fatigu'd as before, and faint for want of Nourishment, having taken none for thirty-six Hours before: So having looked upon his Cloaths, which he perceiv'd were not quite dry, he turn'd the other Side to the Sun, and laid himself down to sleep again; but still nothing but Horror enter'd his Mind: His Soul was continually harass'd with the dismal Apprehensions the Effects of the late Storm had impress'd upon him. He dreamt he was in a terrible Tempest, and the Ship he was in dash'd backwards and forwards thro' the Waves with prodigious Violence, the Clouds pouring down vast Streams of liquid Fire, and the raging Ocean all in Flames. In this dismal Condition he knew not what to do; but 'spying some Land, as he thought, at a little Distance from the Ship, he was endeavouring to get thither; but not daring to trust the Sea, which he imagined was like a Caldron of Oil in a Blaze, resolv'd to try whether he could not jump ashore: But just as he was going to leap, he saw a horrid frightful Monster, with glaring Eyes, and open Mouth, rush from the boiling Flames, and make at him to devour him; which scared him out of his Sleep.

When he woke, he was very much terrified with his Dream, and star'd about him in a frighted Manner, expecting every Minute some Creature to devour him: But, taking a little Courage, put on his Cloaths, which by this time was quite dry. He then looks about him; but alas! could see nothing but the dreadful Effects of the late Tempest, dead Corpses, broken Planks, and batter'd Chests floating, and such Aspects which at once fill'd him with Terror and Grief.

Turning from those shocking Objects, which presented to his Eyes the dreadful Death he so lately had escap'd, he sees at the other Side the Prospect of one more terrible, Hunger and Thirst, attended with all the Miseries that can make Life burdensome. Being seiz'd with the Terror of the threatening Evil, he turns again towards the Sea, and looking on the dead Corpses, which the Sea now-and-then drove to the Rock, and back again, Oh! that I was like one of you, said he, past all Dangers! I have shar'd with you in the Terrors of Death: Why did I not also partake with you in its Relief? But why should I complain? and have so much Reason to be thankful! Had I been cut off, when the Cares of saving this worthless Carcase intercepted me from seeking the Salvation of my Soul, I should not have had the present Opportunity of taking care of it. So, having return'd Thanks for his late Deliverance, he resigns himself to Providence, on whom he fully relies; climbs up the Rock, and being come to the Top, sees Land at the Inside, bearing both Trees and Grass: Heaven be praised! said he: I shall not perish upon these barren Rocks: So made a Shift to go down to it, the Weather then being calm.





T H E  
ENGLISH HERMIT.

---

B O O K III.

---

*An ACCOUNT of QUARLL's wonderful Shifts, and surprizing Manner of Living; of the miraculous Acts of Providence, and of the strange Events which happened in the Island since his being there.*



**B**EING come to the other Side of the Rock, he finds at the Bottom of it a narrow Lake, which separated it from the Land: Therefore pulling off his Cloaths, the Water being but shallow, he wades over with them in his Arms; and dressing himself, walks up a considerable Way in the Island, without seeing any human Creature, or perceiving any Sign of its being inhabited, which struck a great Damp to his Spirits. He walks it over and over, cross-ways and long-ways; yet could see nothing but Monkeys, strange Beasts, Birds, and Fowls, such as he had never seen before.

Having



Having rang'd himself weary, he sat down under a Cluster of Trees, that made an agreeable Arbour: The Place being pleasant and cool, made, as it were, for Repose, and he being still very much fatigu'd, prompted him to lie down and sleep; during which, his Mind is continually alarmed with the frightful Aspect of grim Death: Sometimes he fancies himself striving with the rolling Waves, stretching out his Arms to catch hold of a Plank tossing by; which, just come at, is beaten back by the roaring Billows, whose terrible Noise pronounces his Death; at other Times, he thinks himself astride upon a Piece of Mast, labouring to keep himself on, and of a sudden wash'd away, and sunk down by a bulky Wave; on every Side of him Men calling for Help; others spent and past speaking; here some floating that are already perish'd, and there others expiring; thus in every Object seeing his approaching Fate.

Being awaked out of that irksome and uneasy Sleep, he falls into as anxious and melancholy Thoughts. I have, said he, escaped being drown'd, but how shall I avoid starving? Here's no Food for Man. But why should I despair? Did not *Nebuchadnezzar* live upon Grass for several Years, 'till restored to his Nation? Cannot I do the same for a few Days? by which Time, Providence, who has hitherto protected me, may raise me some means to get from hence. So, being intirely resign'd, he walks about to see the Island, which he found surrounded with Rocks, at the Bottom of which there was a small Lake, which was fordable in most Places, so that he could with ease wade over to the Rock; which he did at every Side of the Island, to see if he could perceive any Ship, whereby he might get away: But, seeing none, and it drawing towards Night, he returns, and employs the  
Remainder

Remainder of the Day in looking for the most convenient Place for him to pass away the approaching Night; and, having fixed upon one of the highest Trees, he gets up as far as he well could, fearing some wild Beast might devour him if he slept below; where, having returned Thanks to Heaven for his late great Deliverance, he commits himself to its Care; then settles, and falls to sleep and slept till Hunger wak'd him in the Morning, having dreamt over-night of abundance of Victuals, which he would fain have come at, but was kept off by a cross Cook, who bid him go and fish for some: To which he answer'd, that he was shipwreck'd; and had nothing to fish withal. Well then, said the Cook to him again, go where thou wast like to lose thy Life, and there thou shalt find wherewithal to support it.

Being awaked he makes Reflections upon his Dream, which tho' he imagined it might proceed from the Emptiness of his Stomach, being customary for People to dream of Victuals, when they go to Bed hungry, yet at that Time it may prove ominous: So driven by Necessity, and led by Curiosity, he went to the same Side of the Rock he had been cast upon; where having stood several Hours without seeing shipping, or aught that might answer his Dream; the Air coming from the Sea being pretty sharp, and he faint, having taken no manner of Food for near three Days, he gave over all Hopes of Relief. Thus submitting himself to the Will of Heaven, which he supposed decreed a lingering Death to punish him for his past Sins, he resolves to return where he lay the Night before, and there wait for his Doom; but being stop'd by a sudden Noise which issued from a Creek in the Rock, not far from where he stood, he had the Curiosity to go and see what occasioned it.

Being

Being come to the Place he heard the Noise proceed from, he sees a fine large Cod-fish near six Feet long, dabling in a Hole in the Rock, where the late Storm had cast it.

One under Condemnation of Death, and just arriv'd at the Place of Execution could not be more rejoiced at the coming of a Reprieve, than he was at the Sight of this Fish, having felt several sick Qualms, Forerunners of the Death he thought he was doom'd to. Heaven be praised ! said he; here's my Dream right : Where Providence rescu'd my Life from the grim Jaws of Death, there it has provided me wherewithal to support it.

So having taken off both his Garters, he gets into the Hole where the Fish lay ; and having run them through its Gills, he hales it out, and drags it after him, being heavy, and he very weak. Going along, he finds several Oysters, Mussels, and Cockles, in his Way, which the Sea had cast up and down the Rock ; and having a Knife about him, he sat down and eat a few ; so refresh'd himself, his Spirits being exhausted for want of Food. This small Nutriment very much recruited his decay'd Strength ; and the Thoughts of his Supply of Provision having dispers'd the dull Ideas his late Want had bred in his Mind, he chearfully takes his Fish, which he drags with much more Vigour than before ; and filling his Pockets with Salt that was congeal'd by the Sun, which he found in the Concavities of the Rock, away he goes to the Place, where he lay the Night before, in order to dress some of the Cod-fish ; where being come, he picks up a Parcel of dry Leaves, and with his Knife, and a Flint, struck Fire, and kindled them : Then, getting together a few Sticks, made a Fire presently, and broil'd a Slice of his Fish ; of which he eat so heartily, that it overcame his Stomach, being

grown

grown  
Order  
was l  
harris  
and d  
Morn  
much  
attack  
heard  
pursue  
he wa  
prever  
woma  
nance  
fled.  
speak,  
Delive  
that h  
consta  
ness :  
in no  
poor l  
the H  
That  
Mean  
but w  
was a  
have  
leavin  
that h  
Ha  
he aw  
but v  
he fear  
ing F  
Allusi  
the M

grown weak with fasting: Thus sick, and out of Order, he applies to the helpless Recourse, which was lying down; and having much fatigu'd and harass'd himself with haleing the heavy Fish up and down the Rock, he fell asleep 'till the next Morning; during which time his Rest was very much disturbed with the frightful Dream of being attacked by a terrible Monster, such as never was heard of, either for Bigness or Grimness; which pursued him, till having run himself out of Breath, he was forced to lie exposed to his Fury; but was prevented being devoured by a grave old Gentlewoman of a most graceful and majestic Countenance, at whose sudden Appearance the Monster fled. Having recover'd Breath, and Strength to speak, he returns the old Lady Thanks for his Deliverance, and begs Leave to wait on her home, that he might know whither to come and pay his constant Duty to her for this her late great Kindness: To which she answered, that she was fixed in no particular Habitation, but dwelt at every poor Man's House; her Occupation being to assist the Helpless, but not the Slothful and Negligent: That he should see her again before it was long. Mean time, she bid him not go on in evil Ways, but whenever overtaken, not to despair; for she was always at hand: Nevertheless, she would not have him too depending. And so went away, leaving him very easy and pleased in his Mind, that he had escaped such vast Danger.

Having slept quietly the remainder of the Night, he awoke in the Morning pretty fresh and hearty, but very much disturbed at his late Dream, which he feared presaged and prognosticated some approaching Evil; but as he could make no comparative Allusion of the old Lady, who rescued him from the Monster, he concludes it must be an Inspiration of



of Providence (whom the grave old Lady did personate in the Dream) who lately had preserv'd him from a Death by all Appearance unavoidable, to keep him from Despair in this his great Extremity, promising to be at hand upon Occasion; yet would not have him neglect Means to get away from a Place where Want threatens him. For tho' he might for a while subsist upon Fish, wherewith he may be supply'd, being surrounded by the Sea; yet he could not imagine which way he could be furnish'd with Cloaths and Bed against the Winter; for want of which he must miserably perish with Cold, unless supply'd by some such dismal Accident as expos'd him to the Want thereof, which he heartily wishes and pray may never happen.

Having made these Considerations, he, on his Knees, returns kind Providence his hearty Thanks for all his Mercies that had been extended to him; begging the Continuance of its Assistance. Then, as he took Directions from his Dream, watching the Opportunity of getting away from that melancholy Place, he goes to the other Side of the Rock, to try if he could perceive any Shipping in Sight.

The Wind, being pretty high, fed his Hopes, that each succeeding Hour would gratify his wishing Look, with that Object the preceding could not bring forth; but was disappointed. The Night approaching, kept back all Probability for that time; however, depending on better Success the next Day, he returns whence he came; and being hungry, makes a Fire, and broils another Slice of the Fish, then lays the rest upon broad green Leaves, and strews Salt thereon to keep it from spoiling; then goes to rest; and as he lay undisturb'd the Night before under the Trees, and much more easy than a-top, he ventur'd again, committing himself to the Care of Providence.

But  
turb'd  
probab  
Winte  
Ideas f  
fore;  
is also  
present  
spaciou  
gious  
tains c  
farther  
Time,  
Snow  
with n  
tiful V  
mon,  
dinary  
ing thr  
and cu  
Bosom  
of Dia  
other  
an Ad  
The  
Woma  
the Pl  
nearer  
he ma  
Vigou  
come  
such b  
by the  
and su  
Appro  
Not  
ering

But his Thoughts, which all Day had been disturb'd with the Dread of those Hardships he must probably undergo, if oblig'd to continue there all Winter, so ran in his Mind, that they occasioned Ideas suitable to those he had form'd the Day before; and Cold being the greatest of his Fears, it is also the principal Subject of his Dream; which presented to his Imagination, that he was in a spacious Place, pav'd with Hail-stones of a prodigious Bigness, and surrounded with high Mountains of Ice, which echo'd with Shivers: At the farther End thereof he saw an old Man resembling Time, as he is commonly painted, with Heaps of Snow and Hail about him, and himself very busy with making more: At his Side stood a very beautiful Woman, whose Shape and Make was uncommon, and her Features and Complexion extraordinary; but what surpriz'd him most, was her having three Pair of Breasts, wonderfully handsome, and curiously placed, which seemed to adorn her Bosom far more than the richest Stomacher made of Diamonds or Pearls could do; so that what in other Women would look monstrous, was in her an Addition to her matchless Beauty.

The Sight of that most perfect and complete Woman warm'd his Blood, which the Coldness of the Place had chill'd, and tempted him to come nearer the Charmer. As he advanc'd, every Step he made, seem'd to add Strength to his Limbs, and Vigour to his Life; which made him desirous to come nearer to the Person from whom he receiv'd such beneficial Effluvia; but was suddenly stop'd by the old Man's turning towards him with a grim and surly Countenance, which threatned his nearer Approach with Evil.

Not daring to come nearer, he stands still, wondering what Business that most charming Creature could

could have with that surly morose old Fellow; when listening a while, he perceived she was asking Boons of him in the Behalf of a vast Number of all Sorts of Creatures that attended her at some Distance behind, which he refused in a most churlish Manner; and as she still persisted in her Suit, following him up and down, the *ill-natur'd* old Man sily steps to the frosty Mountain, and pulls down a large Clod of Ice, which stop'd a Gap therein, from whence came out a Creature, made and featur'd like a Man, but of a monstrous Size, and frightful Aspect; his excessive broad Cheeks hanging down on each Side of his long piked Chin, like two empty Bladders; and his preposterous Belly hung down looking just like a Sail without Wind. That Monster was no sooner out, but he had Orders from the spiteful old Man to drive away the Woman, and all her Attendants; which Word of Command was no sooner given, but it was put in Execution. Having fill'd his shrivell'd Jaws with Wind, which then stood out like so many Kettle-drums, he falls a blowing upon one of the Hills of Snow, and turns it into a thick Shower, which he drove with Violence against that Angel-like Creature, and her Clients, who immediately fled for Shelter.

This barbarous Treatment to the most deserving of Creatures put him in amaze; to whom the angry old Man (seeing he did not go with the rest) came in a Fury, saying, dost thou put me to Defiance? I'll bury thee in that which I only strewed over them, and went to lay hold of him; which caused him to awake in a wonderful Fright.

Being risen, he made Reflections upon the late Dreams: All my Dreams, said he, have ever prov'd ominous; and, if I mistake not, this must have some Signification: Certainly this old Man is *Time*, laying up a Store of Frost and Snow against next Winter;

Winter  
being to  
Modera  
Usage,  
to who  
gether  
The  
Thoug  
said he  
meaner  
rueful P  
reated  
and U  
Soul, m  
ts mali  
those E  
inued  
Name  
known  
cept  
and bur  
illy ta  
n Imit  
I'll pro  
ber co  
Acc  
himself  
of the  
or any  
ttle S  
of the  
e cou  
night  
branch  
he Pl  
Water  
Tops

Winter; and that goodly Woman is *Nature*, who being tender over all her Creatures, interceded for Moderation: And his sutly Refusal, and rough Usage, prognosticate a forward and hard Winter, to whose Severity I must lie exposed, being altogether unprovided.

These Reflections bred various melancholy Thoughts, which almost led him to Despair. Oh! said he, that I was but a Mouse, Bat, or a yet meaner Creature! Then should I be below the cruel Persecutions of Fate. But Man, who was created in the noblest Form, endued with Reason and Understanding, animated with an immortal Soul, must be aim'd at as the only Mark worthy its malignant Darts! But why do I thus rave at those Evils we are the Authors of? Had Man continued in his original State of Innocence, the very Name of Fate or Fortune would not have been known. Well, since this is the Product of Sin, I accept this black Lot as justly coming to my Share; and humbly submitting to Heaven's Decree, I thankfully take this Dream as a timely Warning; and, in Imitation of those Creatures represented in it, I'll provide what Shelter I can against bad Weather comes.

Accordingly, first he begins to think of making himself an House to preserve him from the Injuries of the Weather; but having nothing to make it of, nor any Instrument but a Knife, which could be of little Service to him, he resolves to go to that Part of the Rocks where he was shipwrecked, to see if he could discover any thing among the Wreck that might be servicable to him; and therefore takes a Branch of a Tree along with him, and, coming to the Place, he strips himself, and goes into the Water (the Water being low, discovering the Tops of several sharp pointed Rocks) and gropes  
along



along with his Staff for sure Footing, wading as high as his Chin, diving to the Bottom frequently, and feeling about with his Hands. This he continu'd doing for almost two Hours, but to no purpose, not daring to go out of his Depth; for he well knew, that he could do little Good there, because he could discover no Part of the Ship, not so much as the Mast or any of the Rigging, but fancied she lay in some deep Hole, where it was impossible to get at her.

Thus despairing, and fretting and teizing himself, he calls to mind, that he had a Hatchet in his Hand when he was cast away, and thought probably it might lie in that Clift of the Rock, into which he was thrown; thither he went, and, looking about, perceived something like the Handle of a Hatchet just above the Surface of the Water at the Bottom of the Rock; and, going down to it, took it up; which, to his great Joy, prov'd to be the very Thing he wanted.

Having got his Tool, he dresses himself, and goes on to the Island again, intending to cut down some Trees to make himself a Hut: Looking about, therefore, for the properest Plants, and taking notice of a sort of Trees, whose Branches, bending to the Ground, took Root, and became a Plant, he thought they might be the fittest for this Purpose, and cut a sufficient Parcel of them to make his Barrack; which was full Business for him that Day.

The next Morning, having paid his usual Devotion, he walks out again to look a pleasant and convenient Place to make his Hut or Barrack upon: He walk'd several Hours, and could find none more shelter'd from the cold Winds, than that where he already lay, being in the Middle of the Island, well fenced on the North and East Sides with Trees, which stood very thick: The Place being fixed  
upon,

upon, he hews down some Trees that grew in his Way, and clears a Spot of Ground about twelve Feet square, leaving one Tree standing at each Corner; and, with the young Plants he provided the Day before, fill'd the Distance between quite round, setting them about six Inches asunder, leaving a larger Vacancy for the Door: His Inclosure being made, he bends the Branches a-top from both Sides, and weaves them cross one another, making a Cover to it; which being something too thin, he laid other Branches over, till they were grown thicker: Having finished the Top, he goes about closing the Sides; for which Purpose, taking large Branches, he strips off their small Twigs, and weaves them between the Plants as they do for Sheep-pens; then made a Door after the same Manner.

His Barrack being finished, which took him up fifteen Days hard Work; Now, said he, here's a House, but where's the Furniture? This, indeed, may keep the Weather from me, but not the Cold. The Ground on which I do and must lie, is hard, and doubtless, in the Winter, will grow damp; which, with want of Covering, may occasion Agues and Fevers, the Cholick and Rheumatism, and twenty racking Distempers, which may cause me to repent my having escaped a milder Death.

In this great Consternation and Perplexity, he goes to see if he could spy any Shipping riding within Sight of the Island: As he was walking along, full of heavy and dull Thoughts, which weighed his Looks to the Ground, he happened to find a Sort of high Grass that grows but here-and-there, round some particular Sort of Trees, of which he never took Notice before. Heaven be praised! said he, I have found wherewithal to keep my poor Body from the Ground, whilst I am, by Providence, doom'd to remain here: So passes on, intending  
at

at his Return, to cut down a sufficient Quantity of it to make Mats that might serve him instead of Bed and Bed-cloaths.

Having looked himself almost blind, without seeing the least Prospect of what he desired, he concludes upon going to cut the Grass which he stood in such Want of, and spread it to dry, whilst the Weather was yet warm: That Piece of Work kept him employed the Remainder of the Day, and best Part of the succeeding, having nothing but a Pocket Knife to cut withal. That Work being done, wanting a Tool to spread and turn his Grass, he takes a Branch off the next Tree, which having stript of all the small ones about it, all but Part of that at the Top, being forky, made a tolerable Fork: Thus being equipp'd for Hay-making, he went on with his Work; and as he was at it, he saw, at some Distance, several Monkeys as busy as himself, scratching something out of the Ground, which they did eat upon the Spot, and carried the rest to their Home.

His Hopes that those Roots might be for his Use, those Creatures being naturally dainty, eating nothing but what Men may, made him hasten to the Place he saw them scratching at, that by the Herb they bear (which they tore off) he might find out the Root.

Having, by the Leaves which he picked off the Ground, found some of the same, he digs 'em up, and carried them to his Barrack, where he broiled a Slice of his Fish, and in the Ashes roasted them, which eat something like Chestnuts done in the same Manner.

This new-found-out Eatable much rejoicing him, he returned his hearty Thanks to kind Providence, that he had put him in a Way to provide himself with Bread, and that of a most delicious Kind. As  
soon

soon therefore as he had dined, he went out on purpose to dig up a good Quantity ; but, as he was going to the Place where he had taken notice they grew pretty thick, he sees a Tortoise, of about a Foot over, crawling before him : Heaven be praised ! said he, here's what will supply me both with Victuals, and Utensils to dress it in : He ran therefore, and turned it on its Back, to keep it from getting away, whilst he went for his Hatchet, that he might cut the Bottom-shell from the Top, in order to make a Kettle of the deepest, and a Dish of the flat Part.

Being tired of Cod-fish, he dresses the Tortoise, an Animal seldom eaten but upon Extremity, the Flesh thereof often giving the Flux : Nevertheless he ventured upon it, and liked it extreamly, some Part of it eating very much like Veal ; which at that Time was a very great Novelty to him, having eaten no fresh Meat for a long Time before.

Happening to eat of that Part of the Tortoise which is the most feeding, and less hurtful, he was in no-wise discomposed ; but, having boiled it all, he laid by the Remainder to eat now-and-then between his Fish.

Being provided with a boiling Utensil, he often had Change, by means of those admirable Roots so luckily discovered ; some of which he roasted for bread, others he boiled with Salt-cod : This in a great measure mitigated his Misfortune, and soften'd the Hardship he lay under ; so that, seeing but little prospect of changing his present Condition, by getting away from thence yet-a-while, he thinks on means to make it as easy as possible whilst he remained in it ; for, having projected a Bed, and taking the Grass, which by that time was dry, he calls to work ; and a Mat being the Thing concluded upon, he twists his Hay into Ropes, the



Bigness of his Leg; then he cuts a pretty Number of Sticks, about two Feet long, which he drives in the Ground, ten in a Row, and near four Inches asunder, and opposite to them such another Row at six or seven Feet Distance from the first, which made the Length of his Mat; then having fastened one End of his Rope to one of the corner Sticks, he brings it round the other corner Stick, and so to the next at the other End, till he has laid his Frame; Then he weaves across shorter Ropes of the same, in the Manner they make Pallions on board with old Cable-ends. When he had finished his Mat, he beat it with a long Stick, which made it swell up; and the Grass being of a soft cottony Nature, he had a warm and easy Bed to lie on.

The Comfort and Pleasure he found on his soft Mat (being grown sore with lying on the Ground for the Space of a Month and more) so liberally gratified him for the Time and Labour he had bestowed in making it, that it gave him Encouragement to go about another; a Covering being the next Necessary wanted; for tho' the Winter was, as yet, pretty warm, and he, in a great measure, seasoned by the Hardship he had gone through; yet the Winter approaching, and the present Season still favourable for him to make Provision against it, he goes and cuts more Grass; which being made ready for Use, he lengthens his Loom, to allow for rolling up at one End, instead of a Bolster, and makes it thicker than the first; which he intends, in cold Weather, shall lie upon him instead of Blankets.

Being provided with the most necessary Furniture he wanted, he thinks on more Conveniencies, resolving to make himself a Table to eat his Victuals upon, and a Chair to sit on: Thus, having cut several Sticks about four Feet long, he drives them

in a Row a little Way in the Ground ; then takes smaller, which he interweaves between : Having made the Top, he sets it upon four other Sticks, forked at the upper End, which he stuck in the Ground at one Side of his Barrack, to the Height of a Table ; this being done, he cuts four more Branches, such as he judged would do best for the Seat and Back of a Chair, which he also drove in the Ground near his Table ; and having twisted the Branches, which grew to them, with each other, from Back to Front, and across again, he weaves smaller between, bottoming his Seat ; which completes the Furniture of his Habitation.

That Care being over, another succeeds, of a far greater Moment : Here's a Dwelling, said he, to shelter me from the Weather, and a Bed to rest this poor Body of mine ; but where is Food to support it ? Here have I subsisted near one Month upon a Fish, which the same dreadful Storm, that took away forty Lives, sent me to maintain my own. Well, since kind Providence has been pleased to preserve my Life preferable to so many, who fatally perished in that dismal Accident, I am bound, in Gratitude, to hold it precious ; and since my Fish is almost gone, and I am not certain of more, I must by Degrees bring myself to live upon Roots, which I hope will never be wanting, being the natural Product of this Island : So I must eat of the small Remnant of my Fish, but now-and-then, to make it hold out longer. Dainties or Plenty were not allotted for him that was doom'd to Slavery, but Labour, and hard Living ; and, if I meet here the latter, Heaven be praised, I have escaped the worse ; I can take my Rest, and stand in no dread of any severe Inspector and Taskmaster.

Now being intirely reconciled to the State of Life Providence, on whom he fully depended, had been

pleased to call him to, he resolves to make Provision of those excellent Roots ; and with his Hatchet he cuts a Piece of a Tree, wherewith he makes a Shovel, in order to dig them up with more Ease : With this Instrument he went to the Place where he had observed they grew thickest, which being near the Monkeys Quarters, they came down from off their Trees in great Numbers, grinning as if they would have flown at him ; which made him stop a while : He might indeed, with the Instrument in his Hand, have killed several, and perhaps dispersed the rest ; but would not : Why, said he, should I add Barbarity to Injustice ? It is but natural and reasonable for every Creature to guard and defend their own : This was given them by Nature for Food, which I come to rob them of ; and since I am obliged to get of them for my Subsistence, if I am decreed to be here another Season, I will set some in a Place distant from theirs for my own Use.

Having stood still a considerable Time, those Animals, seeing he did not go forwards, each went and scratched up for itself, afterwards retiring ; giving him the Opportunity to dig up a few for himself : And as he was not come to the Place where they grew thick, he laid them in small Heaps as he dug them up ; while those sly Creatures would, whilst he was digging up more, come down from the Trees, where they stood hid among the Leaves, and steal them away : Which obliged him to be contented for that Time with as many as his Pockets would hold, resolving to bring something next time which would contain a larger Quantity ; and fearing those Animals, which are naturally very cunning, should dig them up, and hide them, he comes early the Morning following to make his Provision : And for want of a Sack to put them in, he

he takes his Jacket, which he buttons up, and ties at the Sleeves; and as he had observed, that every Root had abundance of little Off-sets hanging at it by small Fibres, he pull'd off his Shirt also, of which he makes another Sack to put them in.

Being naked, all but his Breeches, and the Day being pretty hot, he thought he had as good pull them off too, and fill them, his Jacket being but short, and therefore holding but few: Taking, therefore, his Bundle in one Arm, and having the Shovel in the other Hand, he goes to the Place he intended to do the Day before; and expecting to find the same Opposition as he did then, he brought with him some of the Roots he had dug up the preceding Day, in order to throw them amongst those Animals, and so quiet them: But to his great Wonder, and as great Satisfaction, those Creatures which the time before had opposed him with Noise, and offensive Motions, let him now pass by quietly, without offering to meddle with any when dug up, tho' he had laid them up by Heaps in their Way, and stood at a considerable Distance from them.

This surprising Reverence from those Creatures, set him upon deep Reflections on what could be the Cause thereof; whether it might not proceed from the Proximity of their Shape and his: But, then, said he, my Stature and Colour of Skin is so different from theirs, that they cannot but distinguish I am not of their Kind: No, it must be a Remnant of that Awe, entailed by Nature upon all Animals, to that most noble and complete Master-piece of the Creation, call'd *Man*, which, now appearing in the state he was first created in, and undisguised by Cloaths, renew an Image of that Respect he has forfeited by his fatal Transgression, which ever since obliged him to hide the Beauty of his Fabric under gaudy Disguise, which often renders him ridiculous



lous to the rest of Mankind, and generally obnoxious to all other Creatures ; making a Pride of what he ought to be ashamed of : Well, adds he, since my Cloaths bred the Antipathy, I will remove that Cause, which will suit both the Nature of those Animals, and my own Circumstances. From that Time he resolves to go naked, till the Hardness of the Weather obliged him to put something on.

Having pick'd up a sufficient Quantity of Offsets to stock about two Acres of Land, he returns home, leaving behind him a considerable Number of Roots dug up for those poor Animals, which attended him all the Time he was at work, without offering to touch one till he was gone.

Being come home, he fixes upon a Spot of Ground near his Habitation, and digs it up as well as he could with his wooden Instrument, in order to sow his Seed: which having compassed in about twenty Days, he implores a Blessing upon his Labour, and leaves it to Time to bring it forth. Thus having finished the most necessary Work about his Barrack, he resolves to take a more particular View of the Island, which 'till then he had not Time to do ; and taking a long Staff in his Hand, he walks to the Lake, which parts the Land from the Rock, and goes along the Side of it quite round the Island, finding all the Way new Subjects of Admiration : On the Left-hand stood a Rampart made of one solid Stone, adorned by Nature with various Forms and Shapes, beyond the Power of Art to imitate ; some Parts challenging a Likeness to a City, and Clusters of Houses, with here and there a high Steeple standing above the other Buildings ; another Place claiming a near Resemblance to a distant Squadron of Men of War in a Line of Battle : Further, it bears Comparison with the dull Remains of some sumptuous Edifice, ruined by the often-

repeated

repeated  
to Cor  
At for  
demol  
ther P  
as it w  
with a  
Right  
beauti  
and-th  
greeab  
lofty  
stood  
to the  
As  
derful  
being  
posite  
after  
and  
Voic  
of th  
a seco  
like  
all v  
so de  
spent  
I, fa  
relat  
forth  
and  
tion  
of f  
H  
muc  
solv  
futu

repeated Shocks of Time, inciting the Beholders to Condolence for the Loss of its former Beauty. At some Distance from thence the Prospect of a demolish'd City is presented to the Sight; in another Place large Stones like small Mountains, laid, as it were, a-top of one another, impress the Mind with an Idea of the Tower of *Babel*; and on the Right-hand a most pleasant Land covered with beautiful green Grass, like Chamomile, and here-and-there a Cluster of Trees, composing most agreeable Groves, amongst a vast Number of fine lofty Trees of divers Heights and Shapes, which stood more distant, whose Irregularity added much to the Delightfulness of the Place.

As he was walking on, admiring all these wonderful Works of Nature, having caught Cold (not being used to go naked) he happened to sneeze opposite to a Place in the Rock, which hollowed in after the Manner of the Inside of some Cathedral, and was answered by a Multitude of different Voices issuing from that Place: The Agreeableness of the Surprize induced him to rouse those Echoes a second Time, by giving a loud Hem; which was, like his sneezing, repeated in different Tones, but all very harmonious: Again he hemm'd, and was so delighted with the Repetition, that he could have spent Hours in the hearing of it: But why should I, said he, waste those melodious Sounds, so fit to relate the Almighty's wonderful Works, and set forth his Praise? Immediately he sung several Psalms and Hymns, with as much Emulation and Devotion, as if he had been in Company with Numbers of skilful and celebrated Choristers.

Having spent a considerable Time there with much Pleasure, he proceeds in his Walk, being resolved to make that his Place of Worship for the future, and attend it twice a Day constantly.

About three or four hundred Paces farther, having turned on the other Side of a jetting-out Part of the Rock, he was stopt a second Time by another surprizing Product of Nature; a large Stone, growing out of the Rock, advancing quite over the Lake at the Bottom of it, representing something of a human Shape, out of the Breast whereof issued a Fountain of exceeding clear Water, as sweet as Milk; and, when looked at fronting, was like an antique Piece of Architecture, which in old Times they built over particular Springs; and on the other Side appeared as if springing from the Nostrils of a Sea-horse: These three so very different, and yet rightly compared Likenesses, being offered by one and the same unaltered Object, made him curious to examine what Parts of every Resemblance helped to make out the others: And having spent a considerable Time in the Examination, he found every thing, which the Front had Likeness of, was employed in making the Side-representation, by being in some Places shortened, and others lengthened, according to the Point of Sight.

Being satisfied about that Subject, he enters upon another as puzzling: The Basen, in which the Fountain ran, which was about five Yards distant from whence the Water did spring, being but about nine Feet over every Way, without any visible Place to evacuate its over-complement, and yet keeping the same Height, without dashing or running over, altho' the Stream that fell into it ran as big as his Wrist. Having a long Time searched into the Cause, without any Satisfaction, he conjectures it must make its Way out somewhere underground; so went on, till he came to the Place he had begun his March at, which ended that Day's Work.

Having

Having been round the Island, which to the best of his Judgment, was about ten or eleven Miles in Circumference, of an oblong Form, going in and out in several Places, extending from North to South, the South End near twice as broad as the opposite; he resolves to employ the next Day in viewing the Inside. Then recommending himself to Providence, as he never failed to do, both Morning and Evening, he goes to Bed; but not being sleepy, the over-active Faculty in Man roves from one Subject to another: His Mind runs from his present Station to his former, re-assuming his past Pleasures, which he never must hope to meet with again, and calls in all the Evils his present Condition of Life lays him exposed to. These dull Thoughts quite dislodge his late born Hopes of Heaven's Assistance, and shake his future Dependence on Providence: He snarls and quarrels with his Fate, and repines at his Condition; which not being in his Power to mend, he wishes for eternal Sleep, to free his Mind of Tumults and Cares, which croud upon him.

Sleep was granted him, but not Rest: His repining is chastised with terrifying Dreams of the Punishment he had been condemned to; all his past Troubles come upon him in the most grievous and shocking Manner they could appear; his raging Wives at once fall upon him, exerting their utmost Malice and Revenge, which he cannot avoid, but by embracing either an ignominious Death, or a severe and vile Bondage. These terrible Aspects put him in the same Pains and Agony, as if already feeling the assigned Torment.

Having in his Dream, with hard Strugglings, escaped Death, he finds himself in an exceeding hot Country, his half-naked Body continually bending to the hard and dry Ground, grabbing round a nau-



seous Weed for fulsome Worms ; every now-and-then lash'd by a cross and severe Task-master, who hurries him to Work : In this great Perplexity he cries out, Oh, that I had ended my woful Days at the shameful Gibbet ! Sure it would have been a milder Fate ! At which he awaked in such a Consternation, that it was several Minutes before he could be thoroughly satisfied it was but a Dream. Having recalled his diſperſed Senſes, he made this Reflection ; that it really was the Penalty he had been sentenced to, and by Providence preserved from. Setting then his present Condition in Opposition to that, he acknowledges his Ingratitude, for which he secretly repents, and on his Knees, with weeping Eyes, asks Pardon, imploring the Continuation of Providence's Protection ; resolving, for the future, never to think or wish to change that State of Life it had pleased Heaven to place him in ; wholly dedicating the Remains of his Days to God's Worship : Holding henceforth, as inestimable, the Happiness of being freed from those Cares, which daily flew on them who are concerned with the World, which might cool or slacken his Duty to so great a Benefactor.

Having intirely resigned himself to the Will of God, he casts off all Cares, and banishes from his Mind all that could create any ; resolving to employ those Hours that ran between the Intervals of Time he had dedicated to divine Worship, in the Contemplation of the many wonderful Works of Nature, manifested in such various Manners all over the Island.

So he walks along the Land, which he found very level, covered with a delightful green Grass, and adorned with Trees of divers Sorts, Shapes, and Height, inhabited with several Sorts of curious singing Birds, of various Colours and Notes, which

enter-

entertained him with their melodious Harmony: In some Places stood a Cluster of Trees, composing agreeable and delightful Groves, proceeding from only one main Body, whose lower Branches, being come to a certain Length, applied to the Earth for immediate Nourishment, as it were, to ease the old Stem that produced them; and so became a Plant, and did the same.

Having for some time admired the Agreeableness and Curiosity of the Plant, by which Nature seem'd to give human Kind Instructions; and looking about, if perchance he could find any thing in his Way for his own proper Use; he took along with him a Sample of every different Herb he thought might be eatable. Crossing the Island in several Places, he comes at a most delightful Pond, about two hundred Yards in Length, and one hundred and fifty wide, with fine Trees spreading their branchy Limbs over its Brink, which was surrounded with a beautiful Bank, covered with divers Kinds of Flowers and Herbs, so naturally intermixed, which compleated it in Ornament and Convenience, as tho' intended by Nature for more than Mortal's Use.

Having walked several Times around it, with much Pleasure, he sat down a while upon its Bank, to admire the Clearness of the Water, thro' which, to his great Comfort, he saw many different Sorts of Fish, of various Bignesses, Shapes, and Colours. Heaven be praised! said he, here is a Stock of fresh-water Fish to supply me with Food, if the Sea should fail me.

Being sufficiently diverted with their chasing one another, which were of many beautiful and different Colours, and made a most delightful Scene, he proceeds in his Walk, and goes to the South of the Island, where he finds another Subject of Ad-  
- I 6. -  
- miration;

miration; a noble and spacious Wood, whose Shades seemed to be made for the Abode of Peace and Pleasure: He walked round it with much Delight, which made the Time seem short; yet he could guess it to be no less than two Miles about.

Having viewed the Outside, whose extraordinary Agreeableness incited in him an unsurmountable Desire to get into it, but where he was afraid to venture, lest there might be destructive Creatures; yet, having recommended himself to the Care of Providence, he ventured into it, finding several pleasant Walks, some strait, edg'd with lofty Trees, as tho' planted for Pleasure; others crooked and winding, bordered with a thick Hedge of Pimentoes, which cast a most fragrant Smell: Here-and-there a large Cluster of Bushes and Dwarf-trees, wherein sheltered several different Kinds of wild Beasts and Fowls. Sure, said he, this Island never was intended by Nature to lie waste, but rather reserved to be the happy Abode of some, for whom Heaven had a particular Blessing in store: Here is every thing sufficient, not only for the Support, but also for the Pleasure of Life; Heaven make me thankful, that I am the happy Inhabitant of so blessed a Land!

Being hungry, and tired with walking, he goes home, in order to get some Victuals, and, having made a Fire, he boils a Slice of his Salt-fish with some Roots, and then the Herbs he brought with him, which proved of divers Tastes, and all excellent; some eating like Artichocks, others like Asparagus and Spinach. Now, said he, what can I wish for more! Here I possess a plentiful Land, which produces both Fowls, Flesh, and Fish; bears excellent Greens and Roots, and affords the best of Water, which by Nature was ordained for Man's Drink. Pomp and Greatness are but Pa-  
geantry,

geantry, which oftentimes prove more prejudicial to the Actor, than diverting to the Beholder: Ease and Indulgence are apt to breed the Gout, and various Distempers, which make the Rich more wretched than the Poor; now these Evils, Thanks to my Maker, I stand in no Danger of, having but what is sufficient, which never can do any harm.

Thus thoroughly easy in his Mind, he proposes to spend the Afternoon at the Outside of the Rock, in viewing the Sea, and looking for Oysters; so takes in his Hand his long Staff to grabble in Holes; and his Breeches, which he ties at the Knees, to bring them in. Being come to a Place of the Rock he never had been at before, he sees at a Distance, something like Linen hanging upon it; which, when come at, he found to be the Main-sail of a Ship, with a Piece of the Yard fastened to it: Alas! said he, a dismal Token of insatiable Ambition! which makes Men often lose their Lives in seeking what they seldom find; and, if they ever do, 'tis commonly attended with a World of Care. Happy is he who limits his Desires to his Ability; aspiring not above his Reach, and is contented with what Nature requires. Then he falls a ripping the Sheet from the Yard, which he finds in one Place ty'd with one of his Garters! (having himself made use of it for want of another String) Heaven be prais'd, said he, this is no Effect of another Shipwreck, but a Fragment of the unfortunate Ship, whose Loss was my Redemption; which Reflection made him shed Tears.

Having ripp'd the Sail in Pieces, he rolls them up in such Bundles as he could conveniently carry, and lays them down till he had got a few Oysters, proceeding to grope in Holes with his Stick as he went on.

About forty Paces farther, he finds a Chest in a Clift



Clift of the Rock, which had been wash'd up there by the Violence of the late Storm : Heaven ! said he, more fatal Effects of Fate's Cruelty, and Man's Temerity ! Was the Sea made for Men to travel on ? Is there not Land enough for his rambling Mind to rove ? Must he hunt after Dangers, and put Death to Defiance ? What is the Owner of this the better for it now ! Or who can be the better in a Place so remote, and the Access to it so difficult ? being not to be approached but on the Wings of Providence, and over the Back of Death. Now, was this full of massy Gold, or yet richer Things, I thank my God, I am above the Use of it ; yet I'll take it home : It was sent hither by Providence, perhaps for the Relief of some so necessitated and destitute. Then going to lift it, he could not ; therefore was obliged to fetch his Hatchet to beat it open, that he might take away what was in it by Degrees. Having taken as much of the Sail-cloth as he could conveniently carry, with the few Oysters he had got, he went home, and fetched the Tool, wherewith he wrenched the Chest open, from which he took a Suit of Cloaths, and some Wearing-linen : These, said he, neither the Owner, nor I, want ; so laid them down : The next Thing he took out, was a Roll of several Sheets of Parchment, being blank Indentures and Leases ; these, said he, are Instruments of the Law, and often applied to Injustice ; but I'll alter their mischievous Properties, and make them Records of Heaven's Mercies, and Providence's wonderful Liberality to me ; so, instead of being the Ruin of some, they may chance to be the Reclaiming of others. At the Bottom of the Chest lay a Rundlet of Brandy, a *Cheshire* Cheese, a Leather Bottle full of Ink, with a Parcel of Pens, and a Penknife : As for these, said he, they are of Use ; the Pens, Ink, and Parchments have equip'd

me to keep a Journal, which will divert and pass away a few anxious Hours : As for the Cheese and Brandy, they will but cause me new Cares : Before I had 'em, I wanted 'em not : now, the Benefit and Comfort I shall find in them, when gone, will make me hanker after them most ; I wish I had still been without 'em ; but now they are here, it would be a Sin to let 'em be lost. I'll take them home, and only use them at my Need ; which will both make them hold out the longer, and me grow less fond of them.

So, by Degrees, he takes home the Chest, and what was in it ; and now having Materials to begin his Journal, he immediately fell to work, that for want of other Books, he might, at his Leisure, peruse his past Transactions, and the many Mercies he had received from Heaven ; and that, after his Decease, whoever is directed thither by Providence, upon reading his wonderful Escapes in the greatest of Dangers ; his miraculous Living, when remote from human Assistance ; in the like Extremity, might not despair. Thus he begins from his being eight Years old (as well as he can remember, he heard an old Aunt of his say) to the Day of his being cast away, which happened on the 10th of July, 1675, being then twenty-eight Years of Age, resolving to continue it to his Death.

Thus having written the preceding Account of the Shipwreck, and what had befallen him since, to the finding of the Chest, which was on the 15th of September 1675, he proceeds : But calling to mind his last Dream but one, which did warn him to make Provision against Winter, and the Season being pretty far advanced, he gathers a good Store of Fuel and Roots ; begins to line the outside of his Barrack with a Wall of Turf, and lays the same atop, to keep out the Wet : And as he now-and-then

found small Shell-fish and Oysters upon the Rock, he makes a Bridge over the Lake, which in warm Weather he used to wade, that in the Winter he might go over dry: So, having compleated his Bridge, which was made of two strong Poles, which reached from the Land to the Rock, and several lesser Branches laid across pretty close, he retires home, the Day being far spent: The following Night, being the 18th of *September*, there arose a violent Storm, attended with dreadful Claps of Thunder, which the many Echoes from the Rock, rendered more terrible; and Lightnings flashing in a most frightful Manner, succeeding each other, before the preceding was well out of the Sky, which put poor lonesome *Quarll* in such a Consternation, that (notwithstanding his Reliance on Heaven's Protection) he would have given the World (had it been in his Possession) to have been within the Reach of human Assistance; or at least, to have some Company; Solitude adding much to his Terror and Affliction.

The glorious Rising of the next Morning's Sun having laid the mortifying Rage of the blustering Winds, *Quarll*, whose late Alarm was hardly quell'd, still suspecting its most reviving Rays to be terrifying Glances and Flashes of Lightning: but having lain a while, and hearing no Noise, but that which still raged in his Mind, was at last convinced the Storm was over; and so gets up with a Resolution to go and see if he could discern any Effect of the late Tempest.

Being come at the other Side of the Rock, he saw, indeed, surprising Objects, but not assisting; the Mischief that was done, being to the Inhabitants of the Sea only, a vast Number of which had, by the Wind, been dis-clemented; a Quantity of stately Whittings, fine Mackerels, large Herrings, divers  
 Sizes

Sizes of Codlings, and several other Sorts of Fish, with a great Number of Shells, of different Shapes and Bignesses, lying up and down upon the Rock. Heaven be praised ! said he, instead of Damage to bewail, what Thanks have I now to return for this mighty Benefit ! Here the powerful Agent of Mischief is, by kind Providence, made a Minister of Good to me : Make me thankful ! I am now provided for all the next Winter ; and yet longer ; by which Time I am certain to have a fresh Supply.

\* *He who, when in Distress,  
To GOD makes his Address,  
And his Bounties implore ;  
Is sure, and may depend,  
That Relief he will send,  
And at Need help the Poor.*

Thus having taken up as many Fish as he could hold in his Arms, he carries them home, and brings his Shirt, which he used instead of a Sack : So, at several Times, he brought away all the Fish, and as many of the Shells as he had Occasion for ; of some of which he made Boilers and Stew-pans, of others Dishes and Plates : Some he kept Water in, and others Fish in Pickle ; so that he was stocked with necessary Vessels as well as Provision.

Being very weary with often going backwards and forwards with his Fish, which took up all that Day to bring 'em home, he sits down to rest himself ; and the Rundlet of Brandy lying by, he was tempted to take a Sup, which was at that Time very much wanted, his Spirits being very low ; but was loth to taste it, lest he should grow fond of the Liquor, and

\* Lest the Reader should think, these and the following Verses be the Effect of my own Brain, I solemnly protest, they are what I found in his Memoirs, written with his own Hand.

grieve



grieve after it when gone : Some Moments were spent before he could come to a Resolution : At last having considered the Use of it, which suited the present Occasion, he concludes to take a Dram, and to use it like a Cordial, as it was first intended for ; but the Vessel, out of which he drank, being at his Mouth, the Cordial turns to a Nectar ; one Gulp decoys another down ; so the intended Dram becomes a hearty Draught. The Pleasantness of the Liquor made him forget its Nature ; so that poor *Quarll*, who had, for the Space of near three Months before, drank nothing but Water, was presently overcome with the Strength of the Brandy, and fell asleep in his Chair, with the Rundlet on his bare Lap, from whence it soon fell to the Ground, and being unstopt, ran all out.

Being awaked with Hunger, having slept from Evening till almost Noon of another Day, which he knew not whether the succeeding or the next to it ; seeing what had happened, he was sorely vex'd, and could have wept at the Accident ; but, considering the Liquor which occasioned it, might perhaps, in time, have caused greater Mischief, he soon was reconciled with the Loss, but could not with that of the right Order of the Days, which having intirely forgot, hindered the going on of his Journal ; so was obliged to make only a Memorial. That Damage being repaired, another appears of a far greater Consequence ; the *Sunday* is lost, which he had so carefully observed to that Time : How can that be made up ? Now, said he, shall I daily be in Danger of breaking the Sabbath, knowing not the Day. Oh fatal Liquor ! that ever thou wert invented to cause so much Mischief ! Murder, Adulteries, and Blasphemies, are daily, by thy most pernicious Use, occasioned. But why should I lay the Blame upon the Use, when it is the Abuse that does the Hurt ?

and exclaim against a Thing, which being taken in Moderation, is of so great a Benefit, reviving a fainting Heart, raising sinking Spirits, warming cold and decayed Nature, and assuaging several Pains : So blames himself highly for gratifying his Appetite with that wherewith he only ought to have refresh'd Nature ; and since that often misguided Faculty had prompted him to commit the Fault, he dedicated that Day, in which he became sensible of it, to Prayers and Fasting ; and every Seventh, from that he sets apart for divine Worship only, which he hoped would keep him from breaking the Commandments, for keeping holy the Sabbath Day ; it being not certain, that the Day appointed by the Church for that Purpose, was the very Day God had sanctified for Rest : So went to the Place where the Echoes, in many different and melodious Sounds, repeated his Thanksgiving to the Almighty, which he had fixed upon to pay his Devotion, and there spent the rest of the Day in Prayers, and singing of Psalms.

The next Morning, having breakfasted with some of his usual Bread, and a Slice of the Cheese he found in the Chest, he goes about curing his Fish, in order to salt 'em : Having laid by as many, for the present Use, as he thought he could eat whilst fresh, he improves the fair Weather to dry one Part of the Remainder, and keeps the rest in Pickle.

The Winter being near at hand, and the Weather growing damp and cold, hinders him from his Walks ; so being confined within Doors, he employs his idle Hours in beautifying his Utensils, which were not to be used on the Fire ; and bestowed some Pains in scraping and polishing the rest of his Shells, some as fine as tho' they had been Nakers of Pearl ; which made them not only more fit for their intended Uses, but also a great Ornament

ment to his Barrack, which he shelved round with plaited Twigs after the Manner of his Table, and to set them upon it.

Thus he spent the best Part of the Winter, making no farther Remarks, but that it was very sharp, attended with high Winds, abundance of Hail and Snow, which obliged him to make a Broom to sweep it away from about his Hut, which otherwise would have been damaged by it.

But shivering Winter, having exhausted his frosty Stores, and weary with vexing Nature, retired; *Boreas* also, grown faint with hard blowing, is forced to retreat into his Cave; gentle *Zephyrus* (who till then kept up in his temperate Cell) now comes forth to usher in the blooming Spring; so mildly slips on to inform Nature of her Favourite's Approach, who at the joyful News put on her gay enamell'd Garb, and out of her rich Wardrobe supplies all Vegetables with new Vesture, to welcome the most lovely Guest. The feathered Choristers also receive new Strength; their tender Lungs are repaired from the Injuries the foggy and misty Air did occasion; and, thus revived, are placed on every budding Tree, to grace his Entrance with their harmonious Notes.

*Quarll* also, whom bad Weather had confined within-doors a considerable Time, which had in a great measure numb'd his Limbs, and dulled his Senses, now finds himself quite revived: He no longer can keep within; the fair Wather invites him out; the singing Birds on every Side call to him; Nature itself fetches him out, to behold her Treasures.

Having with unspeakable Pleasure walked some Time, diverted with the sweet Melody of various Kinds of singing Birds, and the Sight of abundance of different Sorts of blossom'd Trees, and blooming Flowers;

flowers; all Things within the Island inspiring Joy ;  
 he had the Curiosity to go and view the Sea : So goes  
 over his Bridge ; and then, at the other Side of the  
 Rock, where he finds more Objects, requiring as  
 much Admiration, but affording a great deal less  
 pleasure ; vast Mountains of Ice, floating up and  
 down, threatening all that came in their Way.

These terrible Effects of the Winter, which to  
 that Time he was a Stranger to, occasioned his  
 making these Reflections :

*He, who on Billows roves, Riches or Wealth to gain,  
 is ever in Danger, and labours oft in vain ;  
 If Fortune on him smiles, giving his Toil Success,  
 Each Day new Cares arise, which mar his Happiness.  
 The only Treasure, then, worth laying up in Store,  
 Is a contented Mind, which never leaves one poor ;  
 He is not truly rich, who hankers after more.*

So, having returned Heaven Thanks for his happy  
 fate, he creeps to the North-east Side of the Rock,  
 the Foot of which lay an extraordinary large  
 Whale, which the late high Wind had cast there,  
 and died for want of Water. If this, said he, is all  
 the Damage that has been done last Winter, it  
 may be borne ; so went down, and measured the  
 length of it, which was above thirty Yards, and  
 proportionable in Bigness : There were Shoals of  
 small Fishes swimming about it in the shallow Wa-  
 ter wherein it lay, as rejoicing at its Death : Thus,  
 said he, the Oppressed rejoice at a Tyrant's Fall.  
 What Numbers of these have been destroyed to  
 make this monstrous Bulk of Fat ! Well, happy are  
 they, who, like me, are under Heaven's Govern-  
 ment only. So with his Knife, which he always  
 carried in his Pocket, cuts several Slices of the  
 Whale, and throws them to the small Fishes, say-  
 ing,



ing, 'tis but just ye should, at last, feed on that which so long fed on you; and, as Oil ran, in abundance, from the Places he had cut the Slices out of, it vexed him to see that wasted, which might turn to good Money: But why, said he, should I be disturbed at it? What Use have I for any? Providence takes none, it gives me all *gratis*. So goes on feeling for Oysters with his Staff which he always walked with.

Having at last found a Hole, where by their rattling at the Bottom with his Staff, he judged there might be a pretty many, he marks the Place, and goes home to contrive some Instrument to drag them up, being yet too cold for him to go in the Water; and as he had no Tool but his Knife and Hatchet, both improper to make a Hole in a Board, as requisite to make a Rake, which was wanting for that Purpose; he beats out the End of his Chest, in which there was a Knot: So having driven it out, he fastens the small End of a Pole to it. Thus equipped, he went and raked up Oysters, which added one Dish to his Ordinary, and Sauce to others; yet at length his Stomach growing qualmish with eating altogether Fish, and drinking nothing but Water withal, he wishes he could have a little Flesh, which he might easily, there being Animals enough in the Wood apparently fit for Food; but then he must deprive them of their Lives, barely to make his own more easy.

Thus he debates with himself for some Time, whether or no it would not be Injustice for him (who only by a providential Accident was brought thither to save his Life) now to destroy those Creatures, to whom Nature has given a Being, in a Land out of Man's Reach to disturb: Yet Nature requires what seems to be against Nature for me to grant: I am faint, and like to grow worse, the longer I abstain from Flesh.

Having

Having paused a while; Why, said he, should I be so scrupulous? Were not all Things created for the Use of Man? Now, whether is it not worse to let a Man perish, than to destroy any other Creature for his Relief? Nature craves it, and Providence gives it: Now, not to use it in Necessity, is undervaluing the Gift.

So, having concluded upon catching some of those Animals he had seen in the Wood, he considers by what Means, having no Dogs to hunt, nor Gun; to shoot: Having paused awhile, he resolves upon making Gins, wherewith he had seen Hares catch'd in *Europe*: Thus, taking some of the Cords which he found with the Sail at the Outside of the Rock, he goes to work, and makes several, which he fastens, at divers Gaps in the Thickset, within the Wood, through which he judged that Sort of Beast, he had a Mind for, went.

Impatient to know the Success of his Snares, he gets up betimes the next Morning, and goes to examine them; in one of which he found a certain Animal something like a Fawn, the Colour of a Deer, but Feet and Ears like a Fox, and as big as a well-grown Hare: He was much rejoiced at his Game, whose Mouth he immediately opened, to see if he could find out whether it fed upon Grass, or lived upon Prey, the Creature being caught by the Neck, and strangled with struggling, before it died had brought up in its Throat some of the Greens it had been eating, which very much pleased him; accounting those which lived upon Flesh as bad as Carrion.

Having returned Thanks for his good Luck, he takes it home in order to dress Part of it for his Dinner; so castrates and guts it: But its proving to be a Female, big with three young Ones, grieved him to the Heart, and made him repent making those killing

killing Nooses: What pity, said he, so many Lives should be lost, and Creatures wasted! One would have served me four Days; and here are four killed at once. Well, henceforth, to prevent the like Evil, I'll take alive what I just want, and save all the Females. So, having stuck a long Stick at both Ends in the Ground, making a Half-circle, he hangs one Quarter of the Animal upon a String before a good Fire, and so roasts it.

His Dinner being ready, having said Grace, he set to eating with an uncommon Appetite; and, whether it was the Novelty of the Dish, or that the Meat did really deserve the Praise; he really thought he never eat any-thing of Flesh, till then, comparable to it, either for Taste or Tendernefs.

Having din'd both plentifully and deliciously, he most zealously returns kind Providence Thanks for the late, and all Favours receiv'd; then, pursuant to his Resolution, he goes about making Nets, in order to take his Game alive for the future; and, as he had no small Twine to make it with, he was obliged to unravel some of the Sail which he luckily had by him; and with the Thread, twist some, of the Bigness he judg'd proper for that Use.

Having made a sufficient Quantity, he makes a Couple of Nets, about four Feet square, which he fastens in the Room of the killing Snares; so retired, and resolved to come and examine them every Morning.

Several Days pass'd without taking any-thing, so that he wanted Flesh a whole Week; which did begin to disorder his Stomach, but not his Temper; being intirely resigned to the Will of Providence, and fully contented with whatever Heaven was pleased to send.

One Afternoon, which was not his customary Time of Day to examine his Nets, being to visible

in

in the Day-time for Game to run in; he happen'd to walk in the Wood, to take the full Dimensions thereof, so chanced to go by his Nets; in one of which were taken two Animals, as big as a Kid five Weeks old, of a bright Dun, their Horns upright and strait, their Shape like a Stag, most curiously trim'd, a small Tuft of Hair on each Shoulder and Hip. By their Horns, which were but short, they appear'd to be very young, which rejoiced him the more, being in hopes to tame those which he did not want for present Use; so carried them home, joyful of his Game, depending upon a good Dinner; but was sadly disappointed: The Animals he found were Antelopes (calling to mind he had seen them in his Travels) which, proving both Females, he had made a Resolution to preserve. Tho' they were too young to be with Kid, and he in great need of Flesh, yet he would not kill them; so, with Cords, fastens them to the Outside of his Lodge; and with constant feeding them, in two Months time made them so tame, that they followed him up and down; which added much to the Pleasure he already took in his Habitation, which by that time was covered with green Leaves, both Top and Sides; the Stakes it was made of having struck Root, and shot out young Branches; whose Strength increasing that Summer, to fill up the Vacancy between each Plant, he pulled the Turfs, wherewith he had covered the Outside and Top of the Hut between them, to keep the Cold out in the Winter.

His former Hut, being now become a pleasant Harbour, gave him Encouragement to bestow some Pains about it towards the Embellishment of it, which seem'd to depend on being well attended. He resolv'd upon keeping it prun'd and water'd, the better to make it grow thick and fast, which an-



swered his Intent ; for, in three Years Time, the Stems of every Plant that composed the Arbour, were grown quite close, and made a solid Wall of about six Inches thick, covered with green Leaves without, which lay most regular and even, and within had a most agreeable smooth Bark, of a pleasant Olive-colour.

His late Arbour being, by his Care and Time, and Nature's Assistance, become a matchless Lodge, as intended by Nature for something more than human Guests, he now consults to make it as commodious as beautiful. Here is, said he, a delightful Dwelling, warm in the Winter, and cool in the Summer ; delightful to the Eye, and comfortable to the Body ; Pity it should be employed to any Use, but Repose and Delight ! So resolved upon making a Kitchen near it. Thus having fixed upon a Place convenient at the Side of his Lodge, about six Feet from it, twelve in Length, and eight in Breadth, which he inclosed with the Turfs that covered the Outside of his Arbour, before it was sufficiently thick to keep out the Cold ; then, having laid Sticks across the Top of the Walls, which were about eight Feet high, he lays Turf thereon, and so covers it, leaving an open Place for the Smoak to go out.

The Outside being done, he goes about Inside Necessaries, as Fire-places, to roast and boil at ; thus cuts a Hole in the Ground, at a small Distance from the Wall, after the Manner of Stew-stoves in Noblemen's Kitchens ; then, at another Place, he sets two flat Stones, about eight or nine Inches broad, and one Foot long, edgeways, opposite to one another ; near two Feet asunder ; then puts a third in the same Manner, at the End of the other two ; so makes a Fire-place fit to roast at : Then, for other Conveniencies, he weaves Twigs about  
Sticks,

sticks, stuck in the Wall on one side of the Kitchen, where he lays the Shells fit for Utenfils, which both adorned and furnished it.

Having completed that Piece of Work, he goes and visits his Plantations, which he finds in a thriving Condition; the Roots being, in fix Months Time, grown from the Bigness of a Pea (as they were when first set) to that of an Egg: His Antepes, also, were come to their full Growth, and complete Beauty, which exceeded most four-footed Beasts; having a majestic Presence, Body and Limbs representing a Stag, and the noble March of a Horse: So every thing concurred to his Happiness. For which, having returned his most liberal Benefactor his grateful Acknowledgements, he thinks in Means to prevent any Obstructions that may intercept the Continuation thereof; and as the Want of Cloaths was the only Cause, he could think of, to make him uneasy, having but the Jacket and Hose which were given him on board, to save his own Cloaths, which, when worn out, he could not recruit; therefore, to accustom himself to go without, he thinks those he had, so takes away the Lining from the Outside of his Cloathing, in order to wear the thickest in the coldest Weather, and so thins his Dress by Degrees, till at last, he went quite naked. Having thus concluded, as being the best Shift Necessity could raise him, he falls to ripping his Jacket, in the Lining whereof he finds seven Peas, and three Beans, which were got in at a Hole at the Corner of the Pocket.

Those few made him wish for more, which he had no room to hope for, they being raised by Seed, which the Island did not produce: These few, said he, which at present are hardly sufficient to satisfy a Woman's Longing, may, with Time and Industry, be improved to a Quantity large enough to

serve me for a Meal ; then lays them up against a proper Time to set 'em ; so spent the Remainder of that Summer in walking about the Island, watering his Lodge, weeding his Root Plantation, attending his Nets, which now-and-then supplied him with an Antelope or Goat, to eat at Intervals between Fish he commonly found on the Rock after high Winds and Storms ; never failing to visit the Sea three or four times a Week, according as the Weather did prove ; thus diverting many anxious Hours with Variety of Objects that Element affords. Sometimes he had the Pleasure of seeing great Whales chasing one another, spouting large Streams of Water out of their Gills and Nostrils ; at other Times, Numbers of beautiful Dolphins rolling amongst the Waves ; now and then a Quantity of strange monstrous Fish playing on the Surface of the Sea, some whereof had Heads (not common to Fishes) like those of Hogs ; others not unlike those of Dogs, Calves, Horses, Lions, Bulls, Goats, and several other Creatures : Some chasing another Sort ; which, to avoid being taken, would quit their Element, and seek Refuge in the Air, and fly some Yards above the Water ; till their Fins, being dry, obliged them to plunge in again.

These Pastimes being generally succeeded with bad Weather, and dreadful Storms, check'd the Pleasure they gave, with a Dread of the Evil that threatened to follow. Thus commiserating the Case of those whose Misfortune is to be expos'd to them ; having spent some Time in Reflection, he goes to his usual Devotion ; and calling to mind, that in all that Time he never saw a young Fish in it, he conjectured that something might destroy the small ones ; and as he imagined so it proved : For, at his Approach, a large Fowl flew out of the Pond with a Fish in its Bill, being too large for it to swallow.

At that Distance, the Bird being also upon the Wing, he could neither discern Colour nor Make; but he had the Satisfaction of discovering the Cause why the Fishes did not increase, they being devour'd when young by that Creature; which to prevent, for the future, he studies Means to kill the Destroyer, Nets not being proper Instruments; it being requisite, for that Purpose, to have one all round, as also to cover the Pond, which was impossible, by reason of its Largeness; and a less being of no Use; the Birds probably not coming to one certain Place. He wish'd for a Gun, and Ammunition fitting, as being the most probable Things to succeed; but no such Instrument being within his Reach, he ponders again; during which Time, a Cross-bow offers itself to his Mind, but is as distant from his Reach as the Gun: 'Tis true, there was Stuff enough in the Island to make many, but no Tools but a Hatchet and a Pocket knife; where-with, if he made shift to cut and shape a Bow, he could not make a Latch and Spring necessary to it; so he must not think on't: Yet, a Bow being the only Thing he could apply to, he goes about one forthwith. Thus having picked a Branch of a Tree, which had the Resemblance of Yew, and as tough, of which they are sometimes made, he, with the Tools he had, made shift to make one, of about six Feet long, and Arrows of the same, which he hardens and straitens over the Fire; then, having slit them at one End, about two or three Inches, he slips in a Bit of Parchment, cut sharp at one End, and about three Inches at the other; then ties the End close, to keep it in, which served for Feathers; and, with the Ravelling of some of the Sail, he makes a String to it.

Thus equipp'd for an Archer, wanting nothing but Skill, which is only to be gained by Practice,



he daily exercises Shooting at a Mark for the Space of a Fortnight ; in which Time he made such an Improvement, that in three Shoots he would hit a Mark of about three Inches square, at near fifty Paces Distance.

Being sufficiently skill'd, he goes and lies in wait for his desired Game ; so placed himself behind a Tree, as near to the Pond as he could, whither the Bird came in a few Hours after.

The Creature being pitch'd upon the Bank, never stood still, but kept running round, watching for a sizeable Fish fit to swallow ; so that he had no Opportunity to shoot : 'Till having, at last, spy'd out one, it launch'd itself into the Pond, but rais'd more easily, which gave him Time to take Aim ; nevertheless, he miss'd it, being in Motion ; but when come to the Top, he struck it thro' the Body, as it open'd its Wings, and laid it flat on the other Side of the Pond. He took it up, wonderfully pleas'd at his good Success the first Time of his practising his new-acquired Art ; yet, having taken notice of the Bird's Beauty, he had a Regret for its Death, tho' he might, in Time, have rued its living ; the Stock of Fish weekly decreasing, by his own catching one now-and-then with a small Net he made for that Use, when short of other Provisions ; and their recruiting prevented by that Bird's daily devouring their Young.

The inexpressible Beauty of the Feathers, which were after the Nature of a Drake, every one distinguished from another by a Rim round the Edge thereof, about the Breadth of a large Thread, and of a changeable Colour, from Red to Aurora and Green ; the Ribs of a delightful Blue, and the Feathers Pearl-colour, speckled with a bright Yellow ; the Breast and Belly (if it might be said to be of any particular Colour) was that of a Dove's

Feathers

Feathers, rimm'd like the Back, diversly changing ; the Head, which was like that of a Swan, for Make, was purple also, changing as it mov'd ; the Bill like burnish'd Gold : Eyes like a Ruby, with a Rim of Gold round it ; the Feet the same as the Bill ; the Size of the Bird was between a middling Goose and a Duck, and in Shape resembling a Swan.

Having bemoan'd the Death of that delightful Creature, he carefully takes out its Flesh, which, corrupting, would spoil the Outside ; then fills the Skin with sweet Herbs, which he dried for that Use ; and having sew'd up the Place he had cut open, to take the Flesh out, he set it up in his Lodge.

His good Success in Archery, made him love the Exercise ; so that what odd Hours he had in the Day (besides those he set apart for his divine Worship, and those necessary Occupations about his Lodge, Plantations, and making Remarks) he bestow'd in shooting at the Mark ; which in time made him so expert, that he hardly would miss a standing Mark the Bigness of a Dove, at forty or fifty Yards Distance, once in ten times ; and would shoot tolerably well flying ; having once Occasion to try it upon a monstrous Eagle, which often flew rounding over the Place where his Antelopes and Goats fed, near his Lodge ; which he shot at, fearing it would damage them, and killed with the second Arrow.

The Summer being over, during which, having been much taken up about his Habitation and Plantations, he had neither Time nor Opportunity to make Remarks, farther than that it was some Days very showery, and for the most part generally very hot ; but now the Weather being grown something cold, and the Wind pretty sharp, he must be obliged to put on some Cloaths to keep it off ; being as

yet too tender to go any longer without ; next, to provide for his Antelopes against the approaching Winter ; so makes a Lodge for them, at the Back-side of his Kitchen, with Sticks, which he drove in to the Ground, about two Feet from the Wall, and then bends them about three Feet from the Ground, and sticks them in the said Wall, and smaller Branches he interwove between them : He shuts up the Front, and covers the Top, leaving both Ends open for the Antelopes to go in at ; then lays Grass (which he dry'd on purpose) in the said Lodge, for them to lie on. Thus, having dug up a considerable Quantity of Roots, and being already stock'd with Salt-fish, both dry and in Pickle, he was pretty well provided, for his Cattle and himself, against the ensuing Winter, which proved much like the preceding one, only not so stormy.

The succeeding Spring having awak'd slumbering Nature, and revived what the preceding hard Season had caused to droop, every Vegetable puts on new Cloathing, and recovers their wonted Beauty ; each Animal assumes fresh Vigour ; the Beasts in the Wood leap and bound for Joy, and each Bird on the Trees sings for Gladness. The whole Creation is, as it were, repaired, and every Creature deck'd with new Life : Love, by Nature's Direction, for the Increase of every Kind, warms their harmless Breasts ; each Animal seeks a Mate ; our tame Antelopes quit their Abode, and range the Woods for the Relief ordained to quell their innocent Passion ; which being assuaged, they return home, pregnant with Young, to their Master's great Satisfaction ; who, having given them over, was doubly rejoiced to see them come again in an increasing Condition. Heaven be praised ! said he, I shall have a Stock of my own ; and will not fear wanting.

So,

So, having made fitting Preparations against their Kidding, he goes and examines the Improvement of his new Plantation, where he found his Roots grown full as large as any of those that grew wild. Make me thankful! said he; I am now provided with all necessary Food: I shall no more need to rob those poor Creatures of that which Nature had provided for their own proper Use. Next he goes and views his small Stock of Peas and Beans, which he found in a very promising Case: So, whilst the Weather was fair, he falls to clearing a Spot of Ground to set them in, as they increased.

Turning up the Ground, he found several Sorts of Roots that looked to be eatable, some whereof were as big as a large Carrot, others less. He broke a Bit of every one; some of which breaking short, and not being stringy, he judg'd they might be eatable; Then he smells them; and finding the Scent not disagreeable, he tastes them. Some were sweetish, others sharp and hot, like Horseradish; and those he proposes to use instead of Spice. Sure, said he, these, being of a pleasant Scent and Savour, cannot be of an offensive Nature: So, having manured his Ground, he takes a Sample of every Root which he judg'd eatable, and boils them, as the surest Way to experience their Goodness.

Most of them proved not only passable good, but extraordinary; some eating like Parsneps, others almost like Carrots, but rather more agreeable; some like Beets and Turnips; every one, in their several Kinds, as good as ever he eat in *England*, but of different Colours and Make; some being bluish, others black; some red, and some yellow: These, tho' not wanted, having sufficient to gratify a nicer Taste than his, were nevertheless extremely welcome, being something like his native Country Fare and Product: So having return'd Thanks for



this most agreeable Addition to his Ordinary, he sets a Mark to every Herb which those Roots bore, in order to get some of the Seed to sow in a Ground he would prepare: So, being provided with Flesh, Fish, Herbs, and several Sorts of Roots, he goes and examines what Improvement his Peas and Beans have made; which he found increased to Admiration; the seven Peas having produced one thousand, and the three Beans one hundred: Having returned Thanks for that vast Increase, he lays them by, in order to set them at a proper Season, as he had done the Year before.

By this time his Antelopes had kidded, one of them having brought four young ones, and the second three: This vast Addition to his Provisions very much rejoiced him, being sure now not to want Flesh at his Need, which before he was in Danger of; finding but seldom any thing in his Net: So makes account to live upon two of the young Bucks whilst they lasted; killing one as soon as fit for Meat, and so now and then another, saving only five to breed; one whereof should be a Mate to keep the Females, in Rutting-time, from the Wood; lest, at one time or other, they should stay away for good-and-all.

The old ones being well fed, as he always took care to do, providing for them Store of those Greens he knew they loved; as also boiled Roots for them now-and-then, of which they are very fond; the young ones thrive apace, and grew very fat; so that in three Weeks time they were large, and fit to eat. He killed one; which being roasted, proved to be more delicious than any House-lamb, Sucking-pig, young Fawn, or any other Suckling whatever.

Having lived upon that, with now-and-then a little Fish, about one Month, which was as long as he

he could keep it eatable, having dressed it at two different Times, five Days Interval ; eating the cold Remains in several Manners ; reserving one of the other two Males for a Time he should be scanted, and in want of Flesh ; but was unluckily disappointed by a Parcel of large Eagles, which flying one Morning over the Place where the young Antelopes were playing, being of a gay, as well as active Disposition, who launched themselves with Precipitation upon the Male he reserved for time of Need, and one of the Females which he kept for Breed, seeing his beloved Diverters carrying away by those Birds of Prey, he runs in for his Bow, but came too late with it, the Eagles being gone.

Having lost his two dear Antelopes, especially the Female, having doomed the Male for his own eating, he hardly could forbear weeping, to think of their being cruelly torn to pieces by those ravenous Creatures : Thus having for some Time lamented his Loss, and bewailed their hard Fate, he thinks on Means to prevent the like Evil for the Time to come ; and as his Bow was not always at hand, he resolves upon making a Net, and fastens it between the Trees he saw them come in at.

The succeeding Winter proving very wet and windy, gave him but little Invitation to take his usual Walks ; so having every thing he had Occasion for at hand, he kept close to his Net-making ; for which having Twine to twist, and Thread to ravel out, to make the said Twine, kept him employed till the following Spring, which came on apace.

Having finished his Net, and every thing which belonged to it, he goes and fastens it to the Trees, as he had proposed ; then takes a Walk to his new Plantations, which he found in a thriving Condition ; for which, and other Benefits already receiv'd,

he resolves, as in Duty bound, to attend at his usual Place of Worship, and sing Thanksgiving Psalms, which the Hardness of the Weather had kept him from all the late Winter; but it coming into his Mind, that whilst he was at his Devotion, returning Thanks for the fair Prospect of a plentiful Crop, his Antelopes would break into the Close, the Hedge being as yet but thin, and devour the promising Buds, which are the principal Occasion of his Devotion; this not altogether improper Consideration puts a sad Check to his religious Intention: And though there was a vast Obligation to prompt him to the Performance of that Part of his Duty, yet he could not, with Wisdom, run the Hazard, out of mere Devotion, to lose so promising a Crop, which he should never be able to retrieve; all his Stock of Seed being then in Grass.

As he was debating in his Mind between Religion and Reason, whether the latter ought not to be a Director to the former, he perceiv'd his Antelopes making towards the Peas, whither they, doubtless, would have got in, had he not returned, and driven them another Way: Which Accident convinced him he might find a more proper Time to go about his Devotion; no Man being required to worship to his Prejudice: So, having put off his religious Duty till he had better secured his Peas and Beans, he cuts a Parcel of Branches, wherewith he stops those Gaps to prevent the Creatures going in; and having compleated his Work, he goes to his Devotion, adding to his usual Thanksgiving, a particular Collect for his luckily being in the Way to prevent his being frustrated of the Blessing Heaven so fairly promised to bestow on his Labours.

Having paid his Devotion, he walks about the Island, being all the Way delighted with the Birds celebrating their Maker's Praise, in their different

har-

harmonious Notes! Every thing in Nature, said he, answers the End of its Creation, but ungrateful Man! who, ambitious to be wise, as his Creator, only learns to make himself wretched. Thus he walks till the Evening, making several Reflections on the different Conditions of Men, preferring his present State to that of *Adam* before his Fall, who could not be sensible of Happiness, having never known a Reverse; which, otherwise, he would have been more careful to prevent. Being come home and near Bed-time, he first eats his Supper; and then, having performed his customary religious Service, he goes to Bed: The next Morning, after paying his usual Devotion, he takes a Walk to his Plantations, on which he implores a Continuation of the prosperous Condition they appear to be in; next, he goes to examine his Nets, in which he finds a Brace of Fowls like Ducks, but twice as large, and exceeding beautiful: The Drake (which he knew by a colour'd Feather on his Rump) was of a fine Cinnamon Colour upon his Back, his Breast of a Mazarine Blue, the Belly of a deep Orange, his Neck green, Head purple, his Eyes, Bill, and Feet, red; every Colour changing most agreeably as they mov'd. The Duck was also very beautiful, but of quite different Colours, and much paler than the Drake's.

The Disappointment in catching those delightful Fowls, instead of ravenous Eagles, as he had purposed, no-ways displeased him, but he rather was rejoiced to have such beautiful Fowls to look at; yet it went much against his Mind to deprive those Creatures of their Liberty (the greatest Comfort in Life) which Nature took such Pains to adorn: But, said he, they were created for the Use of Man: So, in keeping them for my Pleasure, they will but answer the End of their Creation. Their Confinement



ment shall be no stricter than my own; they shall have the whole Island to range in. He then pinions them, puts them in the Pond, and makes Baskets for them to shelter in, which he places in the Branches of those Trees that hung closest to the Water, taking particular Care to feed them daily with Roots roasted and boil'd; and the Guts of the Fish, and other Creatures, he used for his own eating; which made them thrive mainly, and take to the Place; so that they bred in their Season.

The five Antelopes had by this time kidded, and brought sixteen young ones: His Peas and Beans also were wonderfully improved, having that Season enough to stock the Ground the Year following. Thus he returned kind Providence Thanks for the vast Increase, and concludes to live upon the young Antelopes as long as they lasted, reserving only one for suck of the old ones, to keep them in Milk, of which he had taken Notice they had plenty. Springing to draw it daily for his own Use; so that in a little Time, he had enough to skim for Cream, which he used for Sauce instead of Butter, and made small Cheeses of the rest: Now having a pretty Store of Dairy-ware, he resolves to make a Place to keep it in; the Kitchen wherein he was obliged to lay his Salt-fish (which commonly smells strong) not being a proper Place for Cream and Milk: For which End he makes a Dairy-house at the other Side of his Dwelling, with Branches of Trees, after the Manner of a close Arbour, and thatches it over with Grass; which answering the Kitchen in Form and Situation, made uniform Wings, that added as much to the Beauty as Convenience of the Habitation.

Having compleated his Dairy, he proceeds in his Resolution of making Cheese, having learned the Way in *Holland*; and for want of Rennet to turn his

his Milk, he takes some of the Horse-raddish-seed, which, being of a hot Nature, had the same Effect: Having Curd to his Mind, he seasons it to his Palate; then with his Hatchet, he cuts a Notch round in the Bark of a Tree, about eighteen Inches in Circumference; and a second in the same Manner, six Inches below that: Then slits the Circle, and with his Knife gently opens it, parting it from the Tree: Thus he makes as many Hoops as he judged would contain his Paste, which, being girded round with Cords to keep them from opening, he fills with the said Paste, and lays them by, till fit to eat.

This being done, which compleated his Provisions, he returns Thanks for those Blessings which had been so liberally bestowed on him: Now, said he, Heaven be prais'd! I exceed a Prince in Happiness: I have a Habitation strong and lasting, beautiful and convenient, Freehold, a Store of Comforts, with all Necessaries of Life free-cost, which I enjoy with Peace and Pleasure uncontrouled: Yet I think there is still something wanting to complete my Happiness: If a Partner in Grief lessens Sorrow, certainly it must in Delight, augment Pleasure. What Objects of Admiration are here concealed, and, like a Miser's Treasure, hid from the World! If Man, who was created for Bliss, could have been completely happy alone, he would not have had a Companion given him: Thus he walks about thoughtful, till Bed-time.

In that Disposition he goes to Bed, and soon fell asleep: The Night also, being windy, added to his heavy Disposition: But his Mind finds no Repose: it still runs on upon the Subject, that took it up the Day before, and forms Ideas suitable to his Inclination: and as Solitude was the Motive of its being disturbed, he indulges it with the Thoughts of Company, dreaming that the Fame of his Station, and

and happy State of Life, was spread about the World; that it prompted a vast Number of People, from all Parts, to come to it, which at last induced several Princes to claim a Right to it; which being decided by a bloody War, a Governor was sent, who laid Taxes, demanded Duties, rais'd Rents, and warns him to be gone, having fix'd upon his Habitation for himself to dwell in. Being sadly disturbed, he cries out in his Sleep, This is a great Punishment for my Uneasiness: Could I not be contented with being Lord of this Island, without provoking Heaven to bring me under the Power of extorting Governours.

There happening a great Noise, he starts out of his Sleep, with the Thought of hearing a Proclamation; and cried out, alas! 'tis too late to proclaim an Evil which is already come: But, being thoroughly awake, and the Noise still continuing, he found he had been dreaming, which very much rejoiced him: He therefore put on his Cloaths, and hastens to the Place he heard the Noise come from.

Being within forty or fifty Yards thereof, he saw a Number of Monkeys of two different Kinds; one Sort squealing and fighting against the other, without intermixing, but still rallying, as they scattered in the Scuffle. He stood some time admiring the Order they kept in; and the Battle still continuing as fierce as at first, he advanced to see what they fought about; for he took notice, they very much strove to keep their Ground.

At his Approach the Battle ceas'd; and the Combatants, retiring at some Distance, left the Spot of Ground, on which they fought, clear; whereon lay a considerable Quantity of wild Pomegranates which the Wind had shook off the Trees the Night before, and which were the Occasion of their Strife.

His coming having caus'd a Truce, every one of

those

those Creatures keeping still and quiet during his Stay, he resolves to use his Endeavours to make a solid Peace; and as that Difference had arisen from the Fruit there present, to which he could see no Reason but that each Kind had an equal Right; he divides it into two equal Parcels, which he lays opposite to each other towards both the Parties, requiring a little Way, to see whether this Expedient would decide the Quarrel: Which answer'd his Intent; those Animals quietly coming to that Share next to them, and peaceably carrying it away, each to their Quarters. This occasioned several Reflections on the frivolous, and often unjust Quarrels that arise among Princes, which create such bloody Wars, as prove the Destruction of vast Numbers of their Subjects. If Monarchs, said he, always acted with as much Reason as these Creatures, how much Blood and Money would they save! Thus goes on to his usual Place of Worship, in order to return Thanks, that he was free of that Evil, the Dream whereof had so tortur'd his Mind; tho' he confess'd he justly deserved the Reality, for his Uneasiness in the happiest of Circumstances.

Having paid his Devotion, he takes a Walk to see how his Peas and Beans came on, which he found in a very improving Disposition, each Stem bearing a vast Number of well-fill'd Pods. Heaven be prais'd! said he; I shall eat of this Year's Crop, and have sufficient to stock my Ground the ensuing one.

Thus being plentifully supplied with Necessaries, and in a pleasant Island, every Thing about him being come to Perfection; his Dwelling, which seems intended by Nature for some immortal Guest, being, by Time, yearly repaired and improved, leaving no Room for Care; yet the unwise Man, as if an Enemy to his own Ease, cannot be contented with the Enjoyment of more than he could reasona-



bly crave, but must disturb his Mind with what concerns him not: What pity, said he, so delightful a Habitation, attended with such Conveniencies, and situated in so wholesome an Air, and fruitful Land, should at my Death, lose all those wonderful Properties, being become useless for want of somebody to enjoy them! What Admiration will here be lost for want of Beholders! But what kind of Man could I settle it upon, worthy of so fine an Inheritance? Were it at my Pleasure to chuse myself an Heir, such only appear virtuous, whose weak Nature confides to Chastity: Every Constitution cannot bear Excess: Want of Courage occasions Mildness, and lack of Strength good Temper: Thus Virtue is made a Cloak to Infirmary: But why do I thus willingly hamper myself with those Cares Providence has been pleased to free me of?

*Leave the Miser the knowing Care,  
Who'll succeed him, or be his Heir;  
That racks his Soul with Discontent,  
Lest what he rak'd for should be spent.  
His Gold to him is far more dear,  
Than all his Friends or Kindred near.*

Thus he holds the Island from Providence: Freely he bequeaths it to whom Providence shall think fit to bestow it upon: And, that his Heir may the better know the Worth of the Gift, he draws a Map of the whole Estate; and made an Inventory of every individual Tenement, Appurtenances, Messuages, Goods and Chattels, and also a Draught of the Terms and Conditions he is to hold the here mentioned Possessions upon; viz.

*Imprimis, A fair and most pleasant Island, richly stock'd with fine Trees, and adorn'd with several delight-*

delightful Groves, planted and improved by Nature, stor'd with choice and delicious Roots and Plants for Food, bearing Peas and Beans; likewise a noble Fish-pond, well stock'd with divers Sorts of curious Fish; and a spacious Wood, harbouring several Sorts of Wild-fowl, and Beasts, fit for a King's Table.

*Item*, A Dwelling commenc'd by Art, improv'd by Nature, and compleated by Time, which yearly keeps it in Repair, as also its Furniture.

*Item*, THE Offices and Appurtenances thereof, with the Utensils thereunto belonging; which said Island, Dwelling, &c. are Freehold, and clear from Taxes; in no temporal Dominion, therefore screen'd from any Impositions, Duties, and Exactions; defended by Nature from Invasions or Assaults; guarded and supported by Providence: All which incomparable Possessions are to be held upon the following Terms, *viz.*

THAT whosoever shall be by Providence settled in this blessed Abode, shall, Morning and Evening, constantly (unless prevented by ill Weather or Accident) attend at the East Side of this Island, and within the Alcove Nature prepared for the Lodgment of several harmonious Echoes, and there pay his Devotion; singing Thanksgiving-Psalms to the great Origin and Director of all Things, whose Praises he will have the Comfort to hear repeated by melodious Voices.

NEXT, he shall religiously observe and keep a Seventh-day for Worship only, from the Rising of the Sun, 'till the going down thereof: Therefore he shall, the Day before, make all necessary Provision for that Day.

THAT

THAT he shall, after any tempestuous Wind or Storm, visit the Sea at the Out-side of the Rock, at the East, South, West, and North Ends, in order to assist any one in Distress.

HE shall not be wasteful of any thing whatsoever, especially of any Creature's Life; killing no more than what is necessary for his Health: But shall every Day examine his Nets, setting at Liberty the Overplus of his Necessity, lest they should perish in their Confinement.

HE must also keep every thing in the same Order and Cleanness he shall find them in; till and manure the Ground yearly; set and sow Plants and Seeds, fit for Food, in their proper Seasons.

Having written this at the Bottom of the Map he had drawn, being Supper-time, he takes his Meal; then goes to his usual Evening Devotion; and, after an Hour's Walk, to his Bed, sleeping quietly all Night, as being easy in his Mind.

The next Morning he takes his usual Walks, and visits his Nets: In that he had set for Eagles, he found a Fowl as big as a Turkey, but the Colour of a Pheasant, only a Tail like a Partridge: This having no Sign of being a Bird of Prey, he was loth to kill it; but having had no fresh Meat for above a Week, he yields to his Appetite, and dresses it, eating Part thereof for his Dinner: It was very fat and plump, and eat much like a Pheasant, but rather tenderer, and fuller of Gravy.

Tho' he was very well pleased with the Bird he had taken, yet he had rather it had been one of the Eagles which kept his young Antelopes in Jeopardy: But as he could not destroy them with his Net, which

which had hung a considerable Time without the intended Success, he projects the Prevention of their Increase, by destroying their Eggs, leaving his Nets wholly for the Use they had been successful in; and searches the Clifts of the Rock next to the Sea, where those Birds commonly build; where having found several Nests, he takes away the Eggs that were in them, being then their breeding-time, and carries them home, in order to empty the Shells, and hang them up-and-down in his Habitation, amongst the green Leaves which covered the Cieling thereof; but having accidentally broke one, and the Yolk and White thereof, being like that of a Turkey, he had the Curiosity to boil one, and taste it, which eat much after the Manner of a Swan's: The rest he saved to eat now-and-then for a Change, reaping a double Advantage by robbing those Birds; lessening thereby the Damage they might do him in time, and adding a Dish to his present Fare.

In this prosperous Way he lived fifteen Years, finding no Alteration in the Weather or Seasons, nor meeting in all the Time, with any Transactions worthy of Record: still performing his usual Exercises, and taking his Walks with all the Content and Satisfaction his happy Condition could procure; entirely forsaking all Thoughts and Desires of ever quitting the blessed Station he then had in his Possession.

Thus having walked the Island over and over (which tho' delightful, yet the frequent Repetition of the Wonders it produces, renders them, as it were, common, and less admirable) he proceeds to view the Sea, whose fluid Element being ever in Motion, daily affords new Objects of Admiration.

The Day being very fair, and the Weather as calm, he sat down upon the Rock, taking Pleasure in seeing the Waves roll, and, as it were, chase one



one another ; the next pursuing the first, on which it rides, when come at ; and being itself overtaken by a succeeding, is also mounted on thus, Wave upon Wave, till come to a bulky Body, too heavy for the undermost to bear, sunk all together : This, said he, is a true Emblem of Ambition ; Men striving to outdo one another, are often undone.

As he was making Reflections on the Emptiness of Vanity and Pride, returning Heaven Thanks, that he was separated from the World, which abounds in nothing else ; a Ship appears at a great Distance, a Sight he had not seen since his Shipwreck : Unlucky Invention ! said he, that thou should'st ever come into Men's Thoughts ! The Ark, which gave the first Notion of a floating Habitation, was ordered for the Preservation of Man ; but its fatal Copies daily expose him to Destruction. Having therefore returned Heaven Thanks for his being out of those Dangers, he makes a solemn Vow, never to return into them again, tho' it were to gain the World : But his Resolution proved as brittle, as his Nature was frail : The Men on board had spied him out with their Perspective-glasses ; and supposing him to be shipwreck'd, and to want Relief, sent their Long-boat with two Men to fetch him away.

At their Approach, his Heart alters its Motion ; his Blood stops from its common Course ; his Sins are all stagnated ; which intirely unframes his Reason, and makes him a Stranger to his own Inclination ; which struggling with his wavering Resolution, occasions a Debate between Hope and Fear : But the Boat, being come pretty nigh, gave Hope the Advantage, and his late Resolution yields to his reviv'd Inclination ; which being now encouraged by a probable Opportunity of being answer'd,  
rushes

rushes on to Execution. He now, quitting all his former Reliance on Providence, depends altogether upon his getting away, blessing the lucky Opportunity of seeing his blessed Country again, for which Pleasure he freely quits and forsakes all the Happiness he enjoyed! gladly abandoning his delightful Habitation, and plentiful Island: He thinks no more of Providence; his Mind is intirely taken up with his Voyage: But Disappointment, which often attends the greatest Probabilities, snatches Success out of his Hand before he could grasp it, and interrupts his supposedly infallible Retreat: The Boat could not approach him, by reason of the Rocks running a great Way into the Sea under Water; nor could he come at the Boat for sharp Points, and deep Holes, which made it unfordable, as well as unnavigable; so that after several Hours striving in vain on both Sides, to come at one another; the Men, after they had strove all they could but to no purpose, said something to him in a Rage, which he understood not, and went without him, more wretched now, than he was when he was first cast away: His full Dependance upon a Retreat made him abandon all further Reliance on Providence, whom then he could implore; but now, having ingrately despised Heaven's Bounties, which had been so largely bestowed on him, he has forfeited all Hopes of Assistance from thence, and expects none from the World: Thus destitute, and in the greatest Perplexity, he cries out, Whither shall I now fly for Help? The World can give me none, and I dare not crave any more from Heaven. O cursed Delusion! but rather cursed Weakness! Why did I give way to it? Had I not enough of the World, or was I grown weary of being happy? In saying, he falls a Weeping: Could I shed a Flood of Tears, sufficient to wash away my Fault or ease

me of the Remorse it does create ! But why does my distracted Fancy propose Impossibilities ? Is not the Ocean sufficient to rid me of this wretched Life ! Then adieu, infectious World, thou Magician of Iniquity ! The Thoughts of which are now more offensive, than the most nauseous Odour of an old Sepulchre. Here he was going to cast himself into the Sea ; but a vast large Monster, rising out of the Water, with its terrible Jaws wide open, looking at him, in a most dreadful Manner, stop'd the Execution of his desperate Design : Thus, Death appearing in a different Shape than he had proposed to meet him in, frightens away his Resolution of dying : I may, said he, condemn myself ; but Vengeance belongs to God alone, who rejects not Tears of Repentance, but always extends his Mercies towards the Penitent ; and since St. Peter, after thrice denying his LORD and MASTER was, by repenting and weeping over his Sin, received again into Favour, I hope these my weak, but sincere Tokens of Repentance will be accepted of, for ever divorcing myself from the World, and never thinking of its alluring Pleasures, but to despise them. And, for the better Performance of that pious Resolution, he sets that woeful Day apart (in which he was about to commit that fatal Deed) for Prayer and Fasting : Thus he went home, and having eat nothing since the Day before, he spent the Remainder of that in fasting and praying, singing penitential Psalms till dark Night, that Nature urged him to repose.

The Pains and Labour he had been at in the Day, climbing up and down the Rock, dragging himself to-and-fro', to come at the Boat, having very much rack'd his Limbs ; and the Disappointment of his full Dependance on the late promising Success, as also the tormenting Remorse, and heavy Grief,

for

for his sinful Reliance thereon, much fatiguing his Mind, render'd Sleep, which is ordain'd for the Refreshment of Nature, of no manner of Help to him: His Thoughts are continually disturbed with frightful Visions; all his past Dangers glare at him, as if threatening their Return; but that which terrified him most was, the frightful Idea of the terrible Monster which rose out of the Sea at that Instant he was going to plunge himself in it.

Being awaked out of his restless Sleep, rather more fatigued than when he lay down, having still the terrible Aspect of the Sea-monster in his Mind, he made several Reflections on the execrable Nature of his intended Sin; admiring the immense Goodness of Providence, who, to deter him from the committing of the enormous Act, had ordered that (beyond Imagination) terrible Object, as the most suitable to the Barbarity of his Design, to strike into him that Terror which the Species of Death he had fix'd upon could not. Thus having with Tears acknowledged the Enormity of his Resolution, he returns Providence Thanks for its inestimable Goodness, who (notwithstanding his late most ungrateful Elopement) preserved him from eternal, as well as temporal Ruin: Having paid his Devotion, and sung a Thanksgiving-psalm, he takes a little Nourishment, his Spirits being low with his past Fatigue and Fasting; and as he could not put out of his Eyes the terrible Aspect of the Monster, which was beyond any chimerical Conception, he resolves to draw it according to the Idea he had in his Mind: Perhaps, said he, having often the Representation before mine Eyes, 'twill make the Object more familiar and less frightful. Taking therefore Pen and Ink, and a Sheet of Parchment, Now, said he, how shall I represent what is past Imagination to conceive? A Form without Like-

L

ness,



ness, and yet comparable to the most terrible Part of every frightful Creature ; a large Head, resembling that of a Lion, bearing three Pair of Horns ; one Pair upright, like that of an Antelope ; another Pair like a wild Goat's ; two more bending backwards ; its Face arm'd all round with Darts, like a Porcupine ; vast great Eyes, sparkling like a Flint struck with a Steel ; its Nose like a wild Horse, always snarling ; the Mouth of a Lion, and Teeth of a Panther ; the Fences of an Elephant, and the Tusks of a wild Boar ; shoulder'd like a Giant with Claws like an Eagle, body'd and cover'd with Shells like a Rhinoceros, and the Colour of a Crocodile.

Having likened every different Part, he proceeded in the Representation thereof ; which being finish'd put him in the greatest Admiration ! Sure, said he, if Nature had a Hand in thy making, it was to assemble, in one Creature, all the fiercest and dreadfullest Animals that are most frightful and terrible. Now, perhaps, this being constantly before me may come less in my Mind. Then fixing it against his Wall, This, said he, will be also a Memorandum of my late Vow, never to endeavour to wish to go from hence, whatever Opportunity offers, tho' attended with ever so great a Probability of Success and Prospect of Gain ; fully settling his whole Mind and Affection on the State and Condition Heaven has been pleased to place him in ; resolving to let nothing enter into his Thoughts, but his most grateful Duty to so great a Benefactor, who has so often and miraculously rescued him from Death.

Thus having intirely banished the World out of his Mind, which before often disturbed it, he limited his Thoughts within the Bounds of his blessed Possession, which affords him more than is sufficient to make his Life happy ; where Plenty flows on him

and Pleasure attends his Desires ; abounding in all Things that can gratify his Appetite, or delight his Fancy : A Herd of delightful Antelopes, bounding and playing about his Habitation, divert him at home ; and in his Walks he is entertained with the Harmony of divers Kinds of Singing-birds ; every Place he comes at offers him new Objects for Pleasure : Thus all seems to concur in completing his Happiness.

In this most blessed State he thinks himself as *Adam* before his Fall, having no Room for Wishes, only that every thing may continue in its present Condition ; but it cannot be expected, that fair Weather, which smiles on his Beauty, will not change. The Sun must go its Course, and the Seasons take their Turn ; which Considerations must, for the present, admit some small Care : He is naked, and his tender Constitution susceptible of the Cold ; therefore the Cloaths he was cast away in being worn out, he is obliged to think of providing something to defend his Limbs from the Hardness of the approaching Winter, whilst it is yet warm. Having considered what to make a Wrapper of, he concludes upon using some of the same Grass he made his Mats of, on which he lay, being soft and warm, very fit for that Purpose : Of this he cuts down a sufficient Quantity, which, when ready to work, he makes small Twine with, and plaits it in narrow Braids, which he sews together with some of the same, and shapes a long loose Gown, that covered him to his Heels, and a Cap of the same.

By that time he had finished his Winter-garb, the Weather was grown cold enough for him to put it on. The frosty Season came on apace, in which there fell such a Quantity of Snow, that he was forced to make a Broom, and sweep it away from about his Habitation twice a Day ; as also

the same he made to the Places he had Occasion to go to, tossing the Snow on each Side, which, before the Winter was over, met a-top, and covered it all the Way ; which obliged him to keep within-doors for a considerable Time, and melt Snow instead of Water ; lest, going for some, he might chance to be buried among the Snow.

The Winter being over, and the Snow dissolv'd, the gay Spring advances apace, offering Nature its usual Assistance, repairing the Damages the late Frost had done ; which joyful Tidings made every thing smile. *Quarll*, also, finding himself revived, took his former Walks, which the preceding bad Weather had kept him from, though there had been no considerable Storm the Winter before.

He having a Mind to view the Sea, and being come to the Outside of the North-west End of the Rock, sees, at the Foot thereof, something like Part of the Body of a large hollow Tree, the Ends whereof were stopp'd with its own Pitch ; and the Middle, which was slit open from End to End, and kept gaping by a Stick laid across.

This put him in mind of Canoes, with which the *Indians* paddle up and down their Lakes and Rivers ; and being on that Side of the Rock next to the Island of *California*, he fancied some of them were come to visit this Island, tho' not many in Number ; their Canoes holding, at the most, but two Men ; and, for the generality, one only : Yet, as some of these People are accounted great Thieves, daily robbing one another, he hastens home to secure what he had ; but it was too late : They had been there already, and had taken away the Cloaths he found in the Chest ; which being, by far, too little for him, hung carelessly on a Pin behind his Door. Had they been contented with that, he would not have regarded it ; but they carried away some of his

curious

curious Shells, and, what grieved him most, the fine Bird he had taken such Pains to dress and stuff, and Care to preserve; as also his Bow and Arrows.

Having miss'd these Things, which he much valued, he hastens to the Outside of the Rock, with his long Staff in his Hand, in Hopes to overtake them before they could get into their Canoe; but happened to go too late, they being already got near half a League from the Rock: Yet they did not carry away their Theft: for there arising some Wind, it made the Sea somewhat rough, and over-set their Canoe; so that what was in it was all lost but the two *Indians*, who most dextrously turned it on its Bottom again, and with surprising Activity escaped into it, one at the one Side, and the other at the opposite; so that the Canoe being trim'd at once, they paddled out of Sight.

Having seen as much of them as he could, he walks to the North-east Side, in order to discover the Effect of the high Wind which happened the Night before.

Being come to the Outside of the Rock, he perceives at a Distance something like a large Chest, but having no Lid on it. Taking that to be the Product of some late Shipwreck, he grieved at the fatal Accident: How long, reflected he, will Covetousness decoy Men to pursue Wealth, at the Cost of their precious Lives? Has not Nature provided every Nation and Country a Sufficiency for its Inhabitants? that they will rove on this most dangerous and boisterous Sea, which may be titled *Death's Dominions*; many perishing therein, and not one on it being safe.

As he was bewailing their Fate who he imagin'd had been cast away, he sees two Men come down the Rock, with each a Bundle in his Arm, who went to that which he had taken to be a Chest;



and, having put their Load in it, push'd it away till come to deeper Water; then, having got in it, with a long Staff shov'd it off, till they could row to a Long-boat that lay at some Distance behind a jetting Part of the Rock, which screen'd it from his Sight, as also the Ship it belong'd to.

The Sight of this much amaz'd him, and made him cease condoling others suppos'd Loss, to run home and examine his own; well knowing those Bundles, he saw carried away, must needs belong to him; there being no other Moveables in the Island but what were in his Lodge.

Being come home, he finds indeed what he suspected: Those Villains had most sacrilegiously rifled and ransacked his Habitation, not leaving him so much as one of the Mats to keep his poor Body from the Ground. His Winter Garb also is gone, and what else they could find for their Use.

The Loss of those Things, which he could not be without, fill'd him with Sorrow: Now, said he, I am in my first State of Being; naked I came into the World, and naked shall I go out of it; at which he fell a weeping.

Having grieved awhile, Why, said he, should I thus cast myself down? Is not Providence, who, gave me them, able to give me more? Thus, having resolv'd before Winter to replenish his Loss, he rests himself contented, and gives the Russians evil Action the best Construction he could. Now I think on it, said he, these surely are the Men, who, about twelve Months since, would charitably have carried me hence, but could not, for want of necessary Implements; and now, being better provided, came to accomplish their hospitable Design; but, not finding me, supposing I was either dead or gone, took away what was here of no Use: Much good may what they have got do them, and may it be

of as much Use to them as it was to me. Thus he walks out, in order to cut Grass to dry, and make himself new Bedding, and a Winter-Garb.

Having walked about half a Mile, he perceives the same Men coming towards the Pond: Heaven be prais'd ! said he, here they be still. Now when they see I am not gone, nor willing to go, they will return my Things, which they are sensible I cannot do without, with which Words he goes up to them.

By this Time they had caught the two old Ducks, which, being pinion'd, could not fly away as the rest did. He was much vex'd to see the best of his Stock thus taken away ; yet as he thought they were come to do him Service, he could grudge them nothing, that would any-wise gratify so good an Intent. But having returned them Thanks for their Good-will, he told them he was very happy in the Island, and had made a Vow never to go out of it.

These being *Frenchmen*, and of an Employment where Politeness is of little Use, being Fishermen, and not understanding what he said, only laugh'd in his Face, and went on to the Purpose they came about: Then having as many of the Ducks as they could get, they proceeded towards the House where they had seen the Antelopes ; some of which not running away at their Approach, they propos'd to catch hold of them.

Being come to the Place where they used to feed, which was near the Dwelling, the young ones, not being used to see any Men in Cloaths, nor any body but their Master, presently fled ; but the two old ones, which he had bred up, were so tame, that they stood still ; only when the Men came to them, they kept close to him, which gave the Men Opportunity to lay hold of them ; when, notwithstanding *Quarll's* repeated Intreaties, they

ried a Halter about their Horns, and barbarously led them away.

*Quarll* was grieved to the Heart to see his Darlings, which he had taken such Care to breed up, and which were become the principal Part of his Delight, following him up and down; and which, by their jumping and playing before him, often dispersed melancholy Thoughts; notwithstanding all these endearing Qualifications, thus haul'd away, he weeps, and on his Knees begs they may be left; and, though they understood not his Words, his Actions were so expressive and moving, that had they had the Humanity of Canibals, who eat one another, they would have yielded to so melting an Object as the poor broken-hearted *Quarll* was; but the inflexible Boors went on, cruelly hailing and dragging the poor Creatures; which, as if sensible of the Barbarity of the Act, look'd back to their afflicted Master, as craving his Assistance; which, at last, so exasperated him, that he was several Times tempted to lay on the Ravishers with his long Staff; but as often was stopt by the following Consideration: Shall I, said he, be the Destruction of my Fellow-creatures, to rescue out of their Hands, Animals of which I have an improving Store left, and deprive them of their Healths, and perhaps of their Lives, to recover what cost me nought? Let them go with what they have, and the Merit of their Deed be their Reward. Thus he walks about melancholy, bemoaning his poor Antelopes Fate, and his own Misfortune: They were used to Liberty, said he, which they now are deprived of, and for which they will pine and die, which, for their Sake, I cannot but wish; for Life without Liberty is a continual Death.

As he was walking, thinking (as 'tis usual, after the Loss of any thing one loves) of the Pleasure he had

had during the Enjoyment, the Ruffians, having secured the poor Animals, came back with Ropes in their Hands. What do they want next? said he, have they not all they desire; would they carry away my Habitation also? Sure they have no Design on my Person: If so, they will not take it so easily as they did my dear Antelopes. Thus he resolved to exercise his Quarter-staff, if they offered to lay Hands on him. The Villains, whose Design was to bind him, and so carry him away, seeing him arm'd and resolute, did not judge it safe for them to advance within the Reach of his Weapon, but kept at some Distance, divining how to seize him.

Quarll, who, by their consulting, guess'd at their Design, not thinking proper to let them come to a Resolution, makes at the nearest, who immediately makes to his Heels; and then to the next, who immediately does the same: Thus he follows them about for a considerable Time; but they divided, in order to tire him with running, till the Night approaching, and the Wind rising, made them fear their Retreat might be dangerous, if they deferred it; so that they went clear away: Which being all he desired, he return'd, as soon as he saw them in the Long-boat, which they row'd to their Ship, that lay at Anchor some Distance from the Rocks.

These Wretches being gone, he returns Heaven Thanks for his Deliverance; and as his Bridge had savour'd their coming, he pulls it off, and only laid it over when he had a mind to view the Sea, and goes home to eat a Bit, having not, as yet, broken his Fast. Having, therefore, eaten some of his Roots and Cheese, and being wearied with hunting those Boors, he consults how to lie, his Bed and Beeding being gone, as also his Winter-gown, and the Nights being, as yet, cold: However, after a small Time of Consideration, he concludes to lie in the Lodge,



which was left vacant by the stolen Antelopes Absence; whose Litter being made of the same Grass as his Mats were, he lay both soft and warm.

When laid down, being sorely fatigued, he soon fell asleep; and as the Plunderers had the preceding Day took up his Cares, they fill'd his Mind in the Night; he has them continually before his Eyes, sometimes with his beloved Antelopes in their pilfering Hands; at other Times barbarously hauling them by their Horns with a Halter, which they ought to have about their own Necks. These Acts of Austerity provoking his Anger, and urging him on to Revenge, he lifts his Staff, which on a sudden is turned into *Hercules's* Club: Startled to see that wonderful Change, he stops from laying on the intended Blow: Rescuing, said he, my darling Animals, I shall lose my precious and inestimable Peace of Mind: What can atone for the Life of a Man? Whilst he was making these Reflections, the Men got clear away with the Fowls and Antelopes, leaving him in deep Melancholy: Thus, as he was bewailing his Loss, calling to Mind the agreeable Pastimes they had often been to him, and the many anxious Hours he had dispersed with their Diversion, a Gentlewoman appear'd before him, of a most agreeable, yet grave Countenance, dress'd in plain Dove-colour'd Cloaths, in most Places threadbare, and in others patch'd with divers Sorts of Stuffs, yet genteel and becoming. He starts at her appearing, wondering what she could come for, having nothing more to lose: I come not, said she, to seek ought from thee, but to restore what thou hast lost. He, being overjoy'd at the Words, looks about, expecting his beloved Antelopes, and what else the Men had taken away; but, seeing nothing, he thought that Vision proceeded from Vapours, which the great Grief for his late Loss had occasioned; and

falls

falls a Thinking, till he was a second Time interrupted by her, bidding him look her in the Face. Be satisfied, be satisfied, Woman, said he : Why, I neither know thee, nor what thou meanest. Well then, reply'd she, I'll inform thee of both : I am *Patience*, whom all the World strive to grieve, and whom none can provoke ; and what I promise to restore thee is Content, which thou throwest away after worthless Things. So she vanishes. At which he awakes.

Having made Reflections upon the latter Part of his Dream, the first Part thereof being but a Repetition of what happened the Day before, he makes this Application : This, said he, is a Check for my discomposing that Peace upon such a frivolous Account, which by Providence was intended I should enjoy, having supplied me with all Necessaries to maintain it : He therefore makes a Resolution never to be vex'd, let what will happen ; but with *Patience* submit to the Will of GOD, who has the Direction of all Things. Then, having paid his usual Devotion, he goes into the Kitchen, in order to Breakfast, and afterwards to take his customary Walk. Whilst he was eating, there arose a Noise in the Air, as proceeding from a Quantity of Rooks, Jackdaws, Crows, and such-like Birds, whose common Notes he was acquainted with ; and as the Noise approached, he had the Curiosity to go and see what was the Matter, but was prevented by the coming of a large Fowl, which flew over his Head, as he was going out : He turned back to gaze at the Bird, whose Beauty seiz'd him with Admiration ; the Pleasure of seeing so charming a Creature quite put out of his Mind the Curiosity of looking from whence proceeded the disagreeable Noise without ; which ceasing as soon as the Bird was sheltered, made him imagine those carrion-Birds

had been chasing that beautiful Fowl, which, seeing itself out of Danger, stood still, very calm and composed; which gave him the Opportunity of making a Discussion of every individual Agreement which compos'd so delightful an Object: It was about the Bigness and Form of a Swan, almost headed like it, only the Bill was not so long, nor so broad, and red like Coral; his Eyes like those of a Hawk, his Head of a Mazarine-blue, and on the Top of it a Tuft of shining gold-colour'd Feathers, which spread over it, hanging near three Inches beyond, all round; its Breast, Face, and Part of its Neck, milk-white, curiously speckled with small black Spots, a Gold-colour'd Circle about it; its Back and Neck behind of a fine Crimson, speckled with Purple; its Legs and Feet the same Colour as its Bill; its Tail long and round, spreading like that of a Peacock, compos'd of six Rows of Feathers, all of different Colours, which made a most delightful Mixture.

Having spent several Minutes in admiring the Bird, he lays Peas, and crumbled Roots, both roast'd and boil'd, before it; as also, Water in a Shell, withdrawing, to give it Liberty to eat and drink; and stood out peeping to see what it would do: Which, being alone, having look'd about, picks a few Peas, and drinks heartily; then walks towards the Door, in a compos'd and easy Manner, much like that of a Cock.

*Quarll*, being at the Outside, was dubious whether he should detain him, or let him go; his Affection for that admirable Creature equally prompts him to both: He cannot bear the Thoughts of parting with so lovely an Object, nor harbour that of depriving it of its Liberty, which it so implicitly intrusted him withal. Thus, after a small Pause, Generosity prevails over Self-pleasure: Why should I, said he, make the Place of its Refuge its Prison?

He

He therefore makes room for it to go, which, with a slow Pace, walks out; and having looked about a small Time, mounts up a considerable Height, and then takes its Course North-west.

The Bird being gone out of Sight, he made Reflections on the Adventure, which he judges to be a Prognostic of some Rebellion or Revolution in *Europe*: Whereupon, having recommended his native Country to the Protection of Heaven, begging a Continuation of Peace, and an End of those unhappy Divisions, which often prove the Ruin of Nations; he goes and sets down, in the Memorial-book, the Transactions of that Year, being 1689, and the 15th since his being in the Island, which proved more fruitful in Events than any of the preceding. The Picture which he had drawn of the terrible Sea-monster, being against his Wall, having accustomed him to the frightful Object that constantly disturbed his Mind, he draws that of the two Russians, committing their Barbarity, and hangs it by the Place; the Idea whereof being to him more terrible than the preceding, he could not suffer it to be long in his Sight; but takes it down, and draws, on the Backside of it, the Villains on a Gibbet: Now, said he, this being what ought to be the End and Explanation of the History, shall now be the right Side of the Picture.

There happening nothing the Remainder of the Year, worthy of Record, he employs it in his customary Occupations; as pruning and watering his Lodge and Dairy, making his Mats to lie on, as also his Winter-garb; every Day milking his Antelopes and Goats; making now-and-then Butter and Cheese, attending his Nets, and such-like necessary Employments.

The mean Time, the *French* Mariners, who, probably, got Money by what they had taken from him



him the Year before, returned, it being much about the same Season ; and being resolved to take him away, and all they could make any thing of, out of the Island, were provided with Hands and Implements to accomplish their Design ; as Ropes to bind what they could get alive, and Guns to shoot what they could not come at, Saws and Hatchets to cut down Logwood and Brazil, Pick-axes and Shovels to dig up Orris-roots, and others of worth, which they imagined the Island produced ; likewise flat-bottom'd Boats to tow in shallow Water, where others could not come ; and thus by Degrees to load their Ship with Booty : But ever-watchful Providence blasted their evil Projects, and confounded their Devices, at the very Instant they thought themselves sure of Success : The Implements in a flat-bottom'd Boat were towed to the very Foot of the Rock, by a young Fellow, who being lighter than a Man, was thought fittest to go with the Tools, which pretty well loaded the Boat.

Their Materials being landed, to their great Satisfaction, the Men on board embarked in two more of the same Sort of Boats ; but were no sooner in them, but a Storm arose, which dashed their slender Bottom to Pieces, and washed them into the Sea, in which they perished, oversetting also the flat-bottom'd Boat on Shore, with the Load, and the Lad underneath it.

The Storm being over, which lasted from about eight in the Morning till almost twelve at Noon, Quarll, according to his Custom, went to see if he could perceive any Damage done by the late Tempest, and if any, distressed by it, stood in want of Help.

Being at that Side of the Rock he used to visit, he could see nothing but a few Fishes and Shells the Sea had left in the Cliffs : If this, said he, be all  
the

the Damage that has been done, make me thankful; it will recruit me with fresh Fish and Utensils. Going to the N. W. Part, where he sees a battered Boat, floating with the Keel upwards, this, said he, bodes some Mischief; but thought it not to be of any Consequence. Having gone about fifty Yards further, he spies a small Barrel at the Foot of the Rock, with several Planks and Fragments of a Ship, floating with the Tide: Alas! said he, these are too evident Proofs of a Shipwreck, to hope otherwise. As he was looking about, he hears a Voice cry out, much like that of a Man, at some Distance, behind a Part of the Rock: Being advanced a small Matter beyond where he was, Heaven be praised! says he, there is somebody, whom I am luckily come to save, and he most fortunately come to be my Companion: I cannot but rejoice at the Event, tho' I heartily grieve for the Accident. Hastening to the Place where he thought the Cries came from, which, as he advanced, he could discern to be too shrill for a Man's Voice, certainly, said he, this must be some Woman by the Noise. This sets his Blood a glowing; his Heart alters its Motion: Now, said he, joyful, Providence has compleated my Happiness: I shall have a Companion, and a Help-mate; and goes on with fresh Vigour, as tho' he had recovered his Strength, and got new Limbs: The rough and savage Rock, which was before, in a manner, inaccessible, is now made easy to walk: He climbs the highest Places with Activity, and goes down the Steep as nimbly; and soon arrived where he judg'd the Person to be: Yet, seeing nothing, but what he took to be a Chest, began to be disheartened: Sure, said he, this is not a second Illusion, to decoy my Fancy after what is not to be had! Thus his Joy on a sudden turned into a deep Melancholy; but the Creature underneath,  
who,

who, having heard some Noise near at hand, ceas'd crying, to listen; yet, seeing nobody come, cries out again somewhat louder than before.

This reviv'd him quite, and recalls his Hopes: It is a Woman, said he, and in that Chest; when, going to break it open, he stops on a sudden: What am I going to do? How do I know the Cause of her being thus lock'd up? Tho' Women are, in a manner, become a Merchandize, yet they never are pack'd up, or chested: She must be in there for a Punishment, which in some Countries is inflicted on Witches. The Boy, who heard a Voice, calls out in *French*, which *Quarll* not understanding, he was afraid to let it out; but his mentioning *Christ* being intelligible to him, made him change his Opinion: For *Christ's* Sake, doth she say? That holy Name Witches seldom make use of; however, in that Name I'll let her out. If she be under Condemnation, was I not so? Had she by Heaven been decreed to die, she would not have been here. At which Words, with his Staff he endeavoured to break that which he took to be the Lid of the Chest, but prov'd the Bottom; and, as he was striking, the Boy underneath, calling to him to turn it up, thrust his Hand under the Side, which he perceiving, tho' he understood him not, stood still: Finding his Mistake, this, said he, is a flat-bottom'd Boat, such as the *Frenchmen* us'd the Year before, when they came and plunder'd me: Now am I safe, if I turn it up? Doubtless they are come in great Numbers. Pausing awhile, and the Lad (whom he took to be a Woman) still continuing his Moan, he was moved to Compassion; and, having consider'd the Boat could not hold any great Number, he ventures: Let what will come on it, or who will be under, for the poor Woman's Sake I'll relieve them, there cannot be many Men. However, I'll let but one out at a

Time:

Time : If he be mischievous, I am able to deal with him. At this, he puts the End of the Staff where he had seen the Hand, and lifts it up about a Foot from the Ground : Out of the Opening immediately creeps the Boy, who on his Knees falls a begging and weeping, expecting Death every Moment, as being the merited Punishment for the evil Purpose he came about. *Quarll*, who expected there was a Woman besides, fearing the Gap the Youth came out at would be too uneasy for her to come through, made Motions for the Boy to help him, in order to set the Boat on its Bottom ; which he did. *Quarll*, seeing the Implements, instead of the Woman, was as much vex'd as disappointed : His Countenance changes ; sometimes he looks at the Things, and then at the Boy ; who seeing him appear angry, thought of nothing but present Death, and again falls on his Knees, holding up his Hands, almost drown'd in Tears, begging for Mercy in such a moving Manner, that *Quarll* could not forbear shedding some Tears ; and tho' the late Disappointment of his proposed Happiness, and the Sight of the Preparations made for his intended Ruin had moved him to Anger against that mercenary Nation ; he helps the young Fellow up by the Hand ; and the Night coming on apace, he takes one of the Hatchets that lay by, and gave another to the Boy, then falls a knocking the Boat to Pieces, and directed him to do the same ; which he accordingly did.

The Boat being demolished, they carried the Boards up higher on the Rock, as also the rest of the Things ; lest, in the Night, some Storm should rise, which might wash them back into the Sea ; it being then too late to bring them away. Having done, they each of them took up what they could carry, and so went home. The young *Frenchman*, finding



finding a kinder Treatment, than either he deserved or expected, was extraordinary submissive and tractable; which made *Quarll* the more kind and mild; and, instead of condemning his evil Attempt, he commiserated his Misfortune, and in room of Resentment shew'd him Kindness: Thus, having given him of what he had to eat, he puts him to Bed in his Lodge, wherein he lay, till he had got his Mats made up; then went to Bed himself, but could not sleep for thinking of his late Disappointment, which intercepted those Pleasures he so much depended on, thinking himself sure of a Female Partner, who, in sharing Happiness with him, would have much added to his Bliss.

Having toss'd and tumbled a considerable Time, he begins to be heavy spirited; Nature is fatigu'd and must be refreshed: Thus he falls asleep; and, as his Hopes the preceding Day had indulged his Desire, his Mind is so impressed in the Night with the Idea of a Female Object, that he dreams he has her by his Side, condoling her for the Dangers she has gone thro', congratulating her lucky Escape, and greeting her happy Arrival into so blessed an Abode.

Thus expressing his Joy, in possessing the only Object which could complete his Happiness, with all the Softness and Eloquence the most passionate Love can impress, he reaches out his Arms to embrace the lovely Phantom his Inclination had bred in his Imagination; but, having groped awhile, and finding nothing, he starts out of his Sleep at this most shocking Disappointment.

Being awaked, the late delusive Pleasures, called to his Mind the real, which he had formerly enjoy'd, and which he did then hanker after: What is Man, said he, without that Part of himself, out of which God made him a Mate? *Adam*, tho' possessing all the

the World, was still wanting, till he had a Woman to keep him Company: In this melancholy Disposition he again falls asleep, and dreams afresh; in which his Imagination gluts his Inclination with those Pleasures it so much desired: Fruition, to him, is but like Liquor to a Man sick of a violent Fever, which only for a Minute quenches his Heat, but augments the Distemper, and at last destroys the Patient: Excessive Love is but short liv'd; what is violent is not lasting; Time with Pleasure runs fast away, but dwells long with Sorrow; Cares weaken Love, and Indifferences breed Discontent; the Jarrings follow, which introduce Division, the Mother of Poverty.

These dismal Accidents, incumbent to unconsiderate Love, coming into the amorous Dreamer's Mind, his great Heat being quench'd, he took Time to consider his Condition; and, seeing himself liable to them, is struck with such a Fear as blots all Pleasures out of his Thoughts, and fills them with dread of future Cares, which he unadvisedly run himself into, and all for the Sake of a short Pleasure.

Starting out of his Sleep at the Approach of those sad Troubles, he returns Heaven Thanks, that it was but a Dream; and begs Pardon for having given so much Way to the Concupiscence of Flesh; getting up, tho' sooner than ordinary, lest he should fall asleep, and dream again of Women.

Having walked about till he thought it time for the Boy to rise, he calls him up, and takes him to the Place that he usually went every Morning and Evening to sing Psalms; where the Youth being come, and hearing so many different Voices, and seeing nobody, was scared out of his Wits, and took to his Heels, making towards the Rock as fast as he could: but as he was not acquainted with the easiest

easiest and most practicable Parts thereof, *Quarll* had made an End of his Psalm, and overtook him before he could get to the Sea-side, into which he certainly would have cast himself, at the Fright; but *Quarll*, who, by the Boy's staring, guess'd his Disorder, not having the Benefit of the Language, endeavour'd to calm him by his pleasing Countenance, and prevented his drowning himself; but could not keep off a violent Fit the Fright had occasioned, which held him several Minutes.

The Fit being over, he and the Boy took away at divers Times, the Remains of the Chest, and of what was in it, which they could not carry home the Day before: Then taking up two Guns, now, said he, these unlucky Instruments, which were intended for Destruction, shall be employed for the Preservation of that they were to destroy, taking them to his Lodge, he sets them at each Side of the Door; then being Dinner-time, he strikes a Light, and sets the Boy to make a Fire, whilst he made some of the Fish fit to fry, which he pick'd up upon the Rock the Evening before; then takes Dripping, he sav'd when he roasted any Flesh, to fry with them. The Boy, who had lived some time in *Holland*, where they used much Butter, seeing Dripping employed in room thereof, thought to please his Master in making some; and as he had seen Milk and Cream in the Dairy-arbour, wanting a Churn only, there being a small Rundlet lying by empty, he takes one of the Ends of it, in which, the next Day, he beat Butter.

*Quarll*, seeing the Youth industrious, begins to fancy him, notwithstanding the Aversion he had conceived for his Nation, ever since the ill Treatment he had receiv'd from his Countrymen; and, as Speech is one of the most necessary Faculties to

breed

breed and maintain Fellowship, he took Pains to teach him *English*.

The Lad, being acute and ingenious, was soon made to understand it, and in six Months capable to speak it sufficiently, so as to give his Master a Relation of his late coming, and to what Intent. The Men, said he, who about one Year since carried away from hence some Antelopes, with extraordinary Ducks, and several Rarities, which they said belonged to a monstrous *English* Hermit, whose Hair and Beard covered all his Body, having got a great deal of Money by shewing them, encouraged others to come; whereupon several, joining together, hired a Ship to fetch away the Hermit, and what else they could find; therefore brought with them Tools, and Guns, to shoot what they could not take alive. Barbarous Wretches! replied he, to kill my dear Antelopes and Ducks! Pray, what did they intend to do with me? Why, said the Boy, to make a Shew of you. To make a Shew of me! Sordid Wretches! Is a Christian then such a Rarity amongst them? Well, and what were the Saws and Hatchets for? To cut down your House, which they intended to make a Drinking booth of. Ho, monstrous! what Time and Nature has been fifteen Years a completing, they would have ruin'd in a Moment: Well, Thanks to Providence, their evil Design is averted. Pray, what is become of those sacrilegious Persons? They are all drown'd, said the Boy. Then, replies he, the Heavens are satisfied, and I avenged: But how camest thou to escape? for thou wast with them. No, replied the Youth, I was upon the Rock when their Boat was dash'd against it, and was overfet with the same Sea, under the flat-bottom'd Boat, where you found me. That was a happy Overfet for thee. Well, is there no Gratitude due to Providence for thy Escape?



Escape? Due to Providence! said he, why, thought You had saved me: I'm sure You let me out. Yes, replied *Quarll*; but I was sent by Providence for that Purpose. That was kindly done too, said the Boy: Well, when I see him, I will thank him: Doth he live hereabout? Poor ignorant Creature! replied *Quarll*; why Providence is every where: What! didst thou never hear of Providence? What Religion art thou? Religion! answered the Youth; I don't know what you mean. I am a Fisherman by Trade, which my Father lives by. Well, said *Quarll*, did he teach thee nothing else? no Prayers? Prayers! replied the Lad: why Fishermen have no time to pray; that's for them who have nothing else to do: Poor Folks must work, and get Money; that's the Way of our Town. Covetous Wretches! Well, said he, I grudge them not what they possess, since it is all the Happiness they aspire at; but thou shalt learn to pray, which will be of far more Advantage to thee than Work, both here and hereafter: From which time he begins to teach him the Lord's Prayer, and the Ten Commandments; as also the Principles of the Christian Religion; all which Instructions the Youth taking readily, won his Affection the more: He likewise taught him to sing Psalms, which farther qualified him to be his Companion in spiritual Exercises, as well as in temporal Occupations.

Now, having Company, he is obliged to enlarge his Bed, the Lodge being wanting for his Antelopes against Breeding-time: He adds, therefore, to his Mats. His other Provisions also wanting to be augmented, and he having both Tools and Boards out of the flat Boat which he had taken to pieces, he and the Lad went about making large Boxes to salt Flesh and Fish in; then, with the Boards that

were left, they made a Table for his Dwelling that he had before, and one for his Kitchen; as also Shelves in the Room of those that were made of Wicker: Then, having recruited his Shell-utensils, that were stolen the Year before, he was completely furnished with all manner of Conveniencies; and, Providence supplying him daily with other Necessaries, there was no room left him for Wishes, but for Thanksgiving, which they daily most religiously paid.

In this most happy State they lived in Peace and Concord the Space of ten Years, unanimously doing what was to be done, as it lay in each of their Ways, without relying on one another.

*Quarll*, who before, tho' alone and deprived of Society (the principal Comfort of Life) thought himself blest'd, now cannot express his Happiness, there being none in the World to be compar'd to it, heartily praying he might find no Alteration 'till Death: But the young Man, not having met with so many Disappointments in the World as he, had not quite withdrawn his Affection from it; his Mind sometimes will run upon his native Country, where he has left his Relations, and where he cannot help wishing to be himself: Thus, Opportunity offering itself one Day, as he went to get Oysters, to make Sauce for some fresh Cod-fish which *Quarll* was dressing, he saw, at a Distance, a Ship; at which his Heart fell a Panting; his Pulses double their Motion; his Blood grows warmer and warmer, till at last, inflamed with Desire of getting at it, he lays down the Bag he brought to put the Oysters in, as also the Instrument to dredge them up with, and takes to swimming. The Men on board, having 'sped him out, sent their Boat to take him up; so he went away without taking his Leave of him he had received so much good from; who,

having

having waited a considerable Time, fearing some Accident would befall him, leaves his cooking, and goes to see for him; and, being come at the Place where he was to get the Oysters, he sees the Bag and Instrument lie, and nobody with them. Having call'd several times without being answered, various racking Fears tortured his Mind: Sometimes he doubts he is fallen in some Hole in the Rock, there being many near that Place where the Oysters were: He therefore with his Staff, which he always carried with him when he went Abroad, at the other Side of the Rock grabbed in every one round the Place; and, feeling nothing, he concludes some Sea-monster had stolen him away, and weeping, condemns himself as the Cause of this fatal Accident; resolving, for the future, to punish himself by denying his Appetite; and only eat to support Nature, and not to please his Palate.

Having given over hopes of getting him again, he returns home in the greatest of Afflictions, resolving to fast till that time the next Day; but, happening to look Westward, in which was the Point the Wind stood, he perceives something like a Boat at a great Distance: Wiping the Tears off his Eyes, and looking stedfastly, he discovers a Sail beyond it, which quite altered the Motive of his former Fear. No Monster, said he, hath devoured him; 'tis too plain a Case, that he has villainously left me: But what could I expect of his Son, who had projected such Evil against me? So saying, he went Home and made an End of dressing his Dinner; and afterwards hangs up the Picture which he had taken down upon his Account, being the true Emblem of what he deserved; resting himself contented, being but as he was before, and rather better; since he had more Conveniencies, and Tools to till his Ground, and dig up his Roots with. Having re-

commended

commended himself to Providence, he resumes his usual Works and Recreations, resolving that no cares shall mar his Happiness for the future, being out of all those irresistible Temptations Way, in which the World abounds, and daily lays the best Mens Hopes in the Dust.

Being again alone, the whole Business of the House lies upon his Hands ; he now must prune and trim his Habitation, that daily harbours him, being made of fine growing Plants, which yearly shoot out young Branches : This makes them grow out of shape. He must also till the Ground ; set and gather his Pease and Beans in their Season ; milk and feed his Antelopes daily ; make Butter and Cheese at proper Times ; dig up his Roots ; fetch in Fuel and Water, when wanted ; attend his Nets ; go Eagle-nesting ; and every Day dress his own Vicinals : All which necessary Occupations, besides the Time dedicated for Morning and Evening Devotions, kept him wholly employ'd ; which made his renew'd Solitude less irksome. And, having walked all that Afternoon to divert his Thoughts, admiring all the Way the wonderful Works of Nature, both in the surprizing Rocks which surrounded the Island, and in the delightful Creatures, and admirable Plants, that are in it ; being weary with walking, he returns home, thanking kind Providence for setting him in so blessed a Place, and in his Way calls at his invisible Choir ; where, having sung a Thanksgiving Psalm, and his usual Evening-Hymn, he goes to Supper, and then to Bed, with a thoroughly contented Mind ; which occasions pleasant Dreams, to entertain his Thoughts.

During his Sleep, his Fancy is delighted with being in Nature's Garden of Pleasure, where none but her Friends are permitted to enter.



The Place appeared very spacious, and of an admirable Form ; full of all Sorts of Nature's Works both Animals, Vegetables, and Minerals, every individual Thing in Perfection : And tho' some were distant, yet all appeared as at hand.

The lofty Trees, which stood on a level Ground covered with curious Grass, embalmed with many different-colour'd Flowers, exceeding in Beauty and Carpet that the most expert Artist could make, spread their branchy Arms over Creatures of all Kinds which lay beneath their delightful Shades : There the bold Lion lies by the innocent Lamb ; the fierce Panther near the harmless Sheep ; the ravenous Wolf with the mild Goat ; Leopard and Deer Tyger and Hare, repos'd together in Peace ; on the Trees, Eagles, Vultures, Falcons and Hawks, quietly perched with the Turtle and the Dove.

These most agreeable Objects, joined with the delightful Noise of the Fountains falling into their Basons, and the purling Streams running their Course, together with the various harmonious Notes of divers Kinds of Singing-birds, put him into an Ecstasy : Sure, said he, this is the Garden of Eden out of which unfortunate *Adam* was cast after his Fall, as being a Dwelling only for Innocence.

Having walk'd a little Way, there being on every Side curious Lanes, every one affording new Objects of Admiration, he comes to a Walk, edged with Orange and Lemon-trees, full of Fruit and Blossoms, at the Foot of which was a narrow Bank bordered with Jonquils, Tuberoses, Iacincts, and other delightful Flowers, both for Sight and Smell : At the End of it there was an Arbour of the same, but so beautiful, that at first Sight he took it for a Tapestry the most expert Artist had exerted himself in making, to shew the Curiosity of Trade, and Greatness of his Skill : In it there sat three Ladies

uncommon Beauty; the middlemost, who was the lustiest, appeared to be the eldest, being of a most sedate Countenance, a moderate Number of Years having both established her Judgment, and settled her Features: She, at her Right-hand, seemed to be of a weaker Constitution; she had in her Hand an Olive-branch bearing Fruit, which, when she gathered, was immediately succeeded with Blossoms; so that it never was without the one or the other: The Lady who sat on the Left-side, was more jolly and gay, yet look'd somewhat careful: she had in her Hand a long Vessel, broad at one end, and sharp at the other, like a Horn, bending towards the Point, full of all Sorts of Fruits.

Having stood still a short Space of Time, looking at those Ladies, thinking it ill Manners to interrupt their Conversation; they, perceiving his Modesty would not permit him to advance, rose up, and went another Way, to give him the Opportunity of viewing the Garden: He accordingly went quite round, and came to the Place where he had begun his Walk; where he saw a stately Cock, of an extraordinary Size, strutting from Animal to Animal, taking from most of them something, whilst they were asleep; which having secured, he falls a crowing in such a loud Manner, that he startled all the other Creatures; which, being awake, and every one missing something, challenged him with it: But he, having now'd a second time in an insulting and daring Manner, strutted most haughtily away; at which the Losers, being much offended, consulted together Means to retake by Force, what he had in so undestine a Manner taken from them; chusing the Lion for their Director: But the watchful Cock, which, whilst they were indulging themselves, successfully made sufficient Provision to maintain what he had done, bid them all Defiance.

There happening a great Noise of Squeeling, wak'd him out of his Dream; and his Mind being impressed with Notions of War, it at first seiz'd him with Terror: But being somewhat settled, and the Noise still continuing, he perceived it proceeded from the two different Kinds of Monkeys in the Island, which were fighting for the wild Pomgranates that the high Wind had shook off the Tree the preceding Night, which was very boisterous.

Having guess'd the Occasion of their Debate, he gets up, in order to go and quell their Difference by dividing amongst them the Cause thereof: Getting up, he opens the Door, at the Outside of which, an old Monkey of each Sort were quietly waiting his Levee, to intice him to come, as he once before did, and put an End to their bloody War.

He was not a little surpris'd to see two such inveterate Enemies, who at other Times never met without fighting, at that Juncture agree so well.

That most surprising Sign of Reason in the Brutes, which, knowing his Decision would compose their Comrades Difference, came to implore, put him upon these Reflections: Would Prince said he, be but reasonable, as those which by Nature are irrational, how much Blood and Monkeys would be saved! Having admired the Uneasiness those poor Creatures, which still went a few Steps forward, and then backward to him; he was resolv'd to Hopes to decoy one or both into his Lodge, by throwing Meat to them: But those exemplary Animals, hearing their Fellows in Trouble, had no regard to their separate Interest, taking no Notice of what he gave them; but kept moving to-and-again with all the Tokens of Uneasiness they could express: Which so moved him, that he hasten'd to the Place; where his Presence caused immediately Cessation of Arms, and each Party moved a considerable

considerable Distance off each other, waiting his sharing the Wind-falls ; which being done, they quietly took that Heap which lay next each Kind, and went to their different Quarters.

This Accident, which in some Manner made out his Dream of Wars, brought it also fresh into his Mind, which was full of Cares about his Country, which he much fear'd, if any should happen in Europe, would be involved therein ; and calling to Remembrance the indigent Disposition he left it in, he fear'd it would lay it open to some usurping Prince's Power : But lest farther Speculation should occasion ill Prognostication to disturb his Peace, he leaves the Event of all Things to the Direction of Providence, and goes home to set down his Dream, and the Year he dream'd it, which was in 1690.

Fourteen Years more being past, every thing keeping its natural Course, there happened nothing extraordinary, each succeeding Year renewing the pleasures the preceding had produced : Thunders and high Winds being frequent, tho' not equally violent, he thought it not material to record them, or their Effects ; as blowing and throwing Fishes, Shells, empty Vessels, batter'd Chests, &c. upon the Rock ; only Transactions and Events wonderful and uncommon : And there happened a most surprising one a few Days after, which tho' of no great Moment, is as worthy of Record as any of our greater Concern ; being a wonderful Effect of Providence, manifested in a miraculous Manner, tho' not to be said supernatural.

One Morning, when he had roasted a Parcel of those Roots which he used to eat instead of Bread, and this he commonly did once a Week, it eating best when stale ; having spread them on his Table and Chest to cool, he went out to walk leaving his door open to let the Air in.



His Walk, tho' graced with all the Agreeable Nature could adorn it with, to make it delightful a Grass Carpet, embroider'd with beautiful Flowers of many different Colours and Smells, under his Feet, to tread on ; before, and on each Side of him fine lofty Trees, of various Forms and Heights, cloathed with pleasant green Leaves, trimmed with rich Blossoms of many Colours, to divert his Eyes a Number of various Sorts of melodious Singing-birds perching in their most lovely Shades, as tho' Nature had studied to excel Man's brightest Imagination and Exquisiteness of Art : Yet all these Profuseness of Nature's Wonders are not sufficient to keep away or expel anxious Thoughts from his Mind. It runs upon his two dear Antelopes, the darling Heads of his present Stock, which he took such Care to bring up, and were become so engaging, always attending him in those fine Walks ; adding, by their swift Races, active Leapings, and other uncommon Diversions, to the natural Pleasantness of the Place which now, by their most lamented Absence, is become a dull *Memorandum* of the barbarous Manner in which they were ravished away from him.

In these melancholy Thoughts, which his Loneliness every now-and-then created, he returns home, where Providence had left a Remedy for his Grievance : A Companion, far exceeding any he ever had, waits his Return ; which was, a beautiful Monkey of the finest Kind, and the most complete of the Sort, as tho' made to manifest the unparalleled Skill of Nature, is sent him by Providence, to dissipate his Melancholy.

Being come to his Lodge, and beholding that wonderful Creature, and in his own Possession, at the farthest End of it, and him at the Entrance thereof to oppose its Flight, if offered, he is a

once filled with Joy and Admiration: Long, said he, I endeavoured in vain to get one, and would have been glad of any, though of the worst Kind, and even the meanest of the Sort; and here kind Providence has sent me one of an unparalleled Beauty.

Having a considerable Time admired the Beast, which all the while stood unconcerned, now-and-then eating of the Roots that lay before him, he shuts the Door, and goes in, with a Resolution of staying within all Day, in order to tame him, which he hoped would be no difficult Matter, his Disposition being already pretty familiar, little thinking that Providence, who sent him thither, had already qualified him for the Commission he bore; which having found out by the Creature's surprising Docility, he returns his Benefactor his most hearty Thanks for that miraculous Gift.

This most wonderful Animal having, by its surprising Tractability, and Good-nature, joined to its matchless Handsomeness, gained its Master's Love, beyond what is usual to place on any sort of Beasts; he thought himself doubly recompensed for all his former Losses, especially for that of his late ungrateful Companion, who, notwithstanding all the Obligations he held from him, basely left him, at a Time he might be most helpful: And, as he fancied his dear *Beaufidelle* (for so he called that admirable Creature) had some sort of Resemblance to the Picture he framed of him, he takes it down, thinking it unjust to bear in his Sight that vile Object, which could not in any-wise claim a Likeness to so worthy a Creature as his beloved Monkey.

One Day, as this lovely Animal was officiating the Charge it had of its own accord taken, being gone for Wood, as wont to do when wanted, he finds in his Way a wild Pomgranate, whose extraordinary

ordinary Size and Weight had caused it to fall out of the Tree: He takes it home, and then returns for his Faggot; in which Time *Quarll*, wishing the Goodness of the Inside might answer its outward Beauty, cuts it open; and, finding it of a dull Lustre, too flat for eating, imagined it might be improved with Things of an acid and sharp Taste: Having therefore boiled some Water, he puts it into a Vessel, with a sort of an Herb which is of the Taste and Nature of Cresses, and some of the Pomgranate, letting them infuse some Time, now and then stirring it; which the Monkey having taken notice of, did the same: But one very hot Day happening to lay the Vessel in the Sun, made it turn sour.

*Quarll*, who very much wanted Vinegar in his Sauces, was well pleased with the Accident, and continued the souring of the Liquor, which proving excellent, he made a Five-gallon Vessel of it, having several, which at times he found upon the Rock.

Having now Store of Vinegar, and being a great Lover of Pickles, which he had learnt to make by seeing his last Wife, who was an extraordinary Cook, and made of all Sorts every Year; calling to Mind he had often in his Walks seen something like Mushrooms, he makes it his Business to look for some: Thus he picked up a few, of which *Beaufidelle* (who followed him up and down) having taken notice, immediately ranges about; and being nimbler-footed than his Master, and not obliged to stoop so low, picked double the Quantity in the same Space of Time; so that he soon had enough to serve him till the next Season.

His good Success in making that Sort of Pickle encourages him to try another; and, having taken notice of a Plant in the Wood that bears a small green

green Flower, which, before it is blown, looks like a Caper, he gathers a few ; and, their Taste and Flavour being no way disagreeable, judging that, when pickled they would be pleasant, he tries them, which, according to his Mind, were full as good as the real ones, and gathers a sufficient Quantity, with the Help of his Attendant ; stocking himself with two as pleasant Pickles as different Sorts : But there is another which he admires above all : None, to his Mind, like the Cucumber ; and the Island producing none, left him no room to hope for any ; yet (as Likeness is a vast Help to Imagination) if he could but find any thing, which ever so little resembles them in Make, Nature, or Taste, it will please his Fancy : He therefore examines every Kind of Buds, Blossoms, and Seeds ; having at last found that of a wild Parsnep, which being long and narrow, almost the Bigness and Make of a Pickling-Cucumber, green and crisp withal, full of a small flat Seed, not unlike that of the Thing he would fain have it to be, he pickles some of them ; which being of a Colour, and near upon the Make, he fancies them quite of the Taste.

His Beans being at that time large enough for the first Crop, he gathers some for his Dinner : The Shells being tender and of a delicate Green, it came into his Mind, they might be made to imitate *French Beans* : They are, said he, near the Nature, I can make them quite of the Shape, so be they have the same Savour. Accordingly, he cuts them in long narrow Slips, and pickles some ; the other Part he boils ; and there being none to contradict their Taste, they passed current, for as good *French Beans* as any that ever grew.

The Disappointment of having something more comfortable than Water to drink being retrieved by producing, in the Room thereof, wherewithal to



make his Eatables more delicious, he proceeds in his first Project ; and, taking necessary Care to prevent that Accident which intercepted Success in his first Undertaking, he accomplishes his Design, and makes a Liquor no-wise inferior to the best Cyder : So that now he has both to revive and keep up his Spirits, as well as to please his Palate, and suit his Appetite.

Having now nothing to crave or wish for, but rather all Motives for Content, he lies down with a peaceable Mind, no Care or Fear disturbing his Thoughts : His Sleep is not interrupted with frightful Fancies, but rather diverted with pleasant and diverting Dreams ; he is not startled at Thunder or Storms, tho' ever so terrible, his Trust being on Providence, who at sundry Times, and in various Manners, has rescued him from Death, tho' apparently unavoidable ; being for above thirty Years miraculously protected and maintained in a Place so remote from all human Help and Assistance.

Yet, notwithstanding his Firmness, and whole Trust on Providence, he is obliged to give way to the Weakness of his Nature ; a strange and shocking Noise is heard at a Distance in the Air, which, having reach'd the Place where he stood, covers it with Darknes for several Minutes ; at which he is so alarmed, that he thinks himself past all Hopes ; till the Noise being ceased, and that which intercepted the Light dispersed, his scared Senses returning to their proper Seat, and his stray'd Reason recall'd, he is ashamed of the Weakness of his Faith, and begs Pardon for his late Mistrust of the Continuation of Providence's Protection, who had all along given him all imaginable Reason to depend on it at all times : Thus, having opened his Door, he steps out to see if he could discover the Cause of the late most surprising and sudden Darknes, in a bright

Sun-

Sun shining Day ; which having found out by the vast Number of dead Birds of several Kinds, lying up and down the Ground, he was seized with no small Amazement, tho' with less Fear.

From that most surprising Aspect he infers, there had been a Battle of those Creatures in the Air, the great Number of which had occasioned the late Decrease.

Having made Reflections upon that astonishing Transaction, he can draw from thence no other Inference, but a Prognostication of dreadful Wars in Europe, from which he begs Heaven to protect his native Country : And lest the dead Birds, that lay in great Numbers, should (with lying) infect the Island, he and his Monkey carried them to the other Side of the Rock, throwing them into the Sea ; only as many of them as had soft Feathers on their Breast and Bellies, he pluck'd away, to stuff a Pillow for the Beast, being a little too hot at Nights for it to lie upon the Bed. So having cleared the Place, and being tired with often going up and down the rugged Rock, he stayed at home the Remainder of the Day, and at Night goes to Bed ; but, as the late Omen of approaching Evil had preoccupied his Thoughts in the Day with Cares concerning his Country, his Mind ran upon it in the Night ; dreaming he sees Wives weeping, and melting into Tears, taking their Leaves of their indulgent Husbands ; hanging, destitute of Strength, about their Necks, whose Grief weighed them to the Ground. Turning from that afflicting Object, he sees another as shocking ; the old Father, bathed in Tears, embracing his only Son, bidding him Farewell, and, with him, all the Comforts of this Life, and Support of his Age. Moving his Eyes from that, they light on full as bad a Sight ; the tender Mother swooning in her dear Child's Arms, whom an inex-

orable Press-gang is haling away. Thus every Face expressing Grief for a Relation, or a Friend, not being able any longer to behold those terrifying Objects, with which the Town abounded, he betakes himself to the Country; that, by keeping from the Afflicted, he may avoid Grief.

Having quitted the Town, he finds himself, on a sudden, in a Place as full of Terrors, where he saw Streams of reeking Blood here and there; loose Horses kicking and prancing about; some dragging their late Riders by the Stirrups; others wounded, and their Guts hanging about; at a Distance, Crowds of Men in Flame and Smoke, confusedly moving like Heaps of Dust in a Whirlwind, leaving behind them, as they moved, vast Numbers of Men and Horses, both dead and dying; some without Legs, others without Arms, and abundance with but one of each.

At a Distance from thence, some in Pursuit of their Enemies, hacking and cutting them down all the Way before them, like Wood for Fuel; others, flying from being slain, cast themselves into rapid Rivers, where they perish by Thousands.

As he was looking at those terrible Objects, he finds himself on a sudden surrounded by rustical Soldiers, holding their Swords and Bayonets to his Breast, and asking him, in a surly Manner, Whether *High or Low?* at which being very much startled, not knowing what to answer, nor, indeed, what they meant, he told them, He was an *Englishman*; which they appearing to be also, made him hope for better Usage: But they seizing him in a violent Manner, said, he might be *English*, and yet an Enemy to the Country. Then he awaked, in a wonderful Fright; but, being come to himself, he concludes, that his Dream proceeded from his late Surprise at the preceding Day's astonishing Trans-

actions;

actions: Therefore, having again recommended his Country to Heaven's Protection, he goes about making the Bed for his Monkey, as he had concluded on before, and with some Sail-cloth makes a Case, stuffing it with the Feathers he had saved for that Purpose.

The Night being come, he lays the Couching, which he made for the Beast, by his own Bed; which very readily went to it, being very soft and easy.

And, as Cares for his Country had in the Day occupied his Thoughts, his Mind in the Night is impressed with the Subject, tho' not with so dismal an Idea as the preceding; having since been diverted with such Objects as removed the terrifying Aspects, which before offered themselves to his Imagination; which now is taken up with being in *St. James's Park*, where he had formerly taken Pleasure, and which he fancies had since lost many of its former Agreeablenesses.

As he was walking, a Report was raised, that a certain great Person (who, by his late great Services to the Nation, had gained a Title to the Palace) was just deceased; having, before his Death, intailed the same upon a foreign Prince of great Renown: This surprising Piece of News occasioned a sudden Alteration in every body's Countenance: Some looked pale with Grief, others red with Wrath; but every thing in Nature seemed to express a Feeling for the Loss; the Trees shed half their Virtues, and the Grass withered.

This dull Scene having lasted some small Time, the Trees and Grass recover their former Verdure, brighter than before; the lofty Oaks, which he fancied bordered the Mall, bore fine Roses in vast Number.

This



## 254 *The English Hermit.*

This additional Beauty in those noble Plants, already so famed abroad for their Toughness and Strength, prompts People of all Nations to come and refresh themselves under their lofty and fragrant Shades.

Having with great Satisfaction admired the surprising Improvement of the Oaks, which, to his Imagination, prognosticated Prosperity to the Nation, he walks on Northward, where he saw abundance of Thistles, which made him wonder they were permitted to grow in a Place where everything ought to contribute to its Agreeableness and Pleasantness; but, having considered the Stoutness of the Plants, which denoted their being well-rooted, he judged it impossible to clear the Ground: Besides, the Bees loving to settle on them, and probably sucking more Honey from their Blossoms than any more agreeable or sweet-scented Flower; for that Reason, he imagined they were not gathered.

Walking back again, he meets with several Noblemen, some with a blue Cordoon, others with green, each with a Gardening-tool in his Hand, going to turn up and till the Ground, between that where the Thistles grew, and that where the Oaks stood: He was startled to see those great Persons, who hardly will concern themselves with their own Lands and Possessions, labour to improve that wherein every private Person had a Share. He stood some Time admiring their Dexterity, and Readiness at their Work; then walks on to the Mall, which he found thronged with a Multitude of People of all Nations, every one having a Rose in his Hand, wherewith they diverted themselves as they walked.

Having gazed about him a considerable Time, he had a Fancy to go and see how the noble Gardeners went on with their Work; where, being come,  
he

he finds, to his great Admiration, the Ground had been so wonderfully well manur'd, that the Oaks and Thistles had struck their Roots through it, and met; so, growing together, had produced a Plant which bore both Roses and Thistles, to every-body's Wonder; which made the Thistles so valued ever since, that there are but few great or fine Gardens, which have not more or less of them.

His Monkey, being startled out of his Sleep in a mighty Fright, ran behind his Back squeaking, and awaked him in the midst of his Amazement; being exceedingly pleased with his late Dream, of which he conceived a mighty good Omen to Old *England*, differing so very much from the preceding, both in Nature and Signification.

Thus, tho' earlier than he usually rose, he gets up to set it down, whilst fresh in his Mind, and also the Year, being 1707. then takes a Walk before Breakfast, and the Beast with him; which, being not yet recovered of its late Fright, keeps close to his Master, every now-and-then looking behind, as tho' still afraid; at which *Quarll* concludes the Creature must needs have been disturbed in its Sleep, the Night before, with some frightful Dream; which made him wonder, that an Animal void of Reason, and incapable of Reflection, should be susceptible of Imagination.

The Day being passed without any extraordinary Occurrence, he made no farther Remark, but followed his usual Occupation, and then went to his Rest, and the Monkey to his new Bed, as the Night before, which he took Care to draw as close to his Master as he could; then, having been twice or thrice about the Room, examining every Corner, he lies down, and sleeps quietly till the Dawning of the Morning; at which time he starts up again, as the Night before.

*Quarll,*

*Quarll*, being a second time awaked in the same Manner, and much about the same Hour, concludes the Cause must proceed from the Pillow, and resolves to experiment it himself the next Night; at which time Crowds of terrifying Aspects appear in his Imagination, which allure his whole Faculties, and set all his Senses in an Uproar; his Eyes are taken up with frightful Objects, and his Ears filled with a terrible Noise; at which the rest of his Senses have lost their Offices, and are become useless.

Being awake the next Morning, he finds himself incline to believe, that the Pillow had really some Influence on his Imagination; but as one Night's Experience was not a sufficient Solution to his Inquiry in that supernatural Operation, having often dreamed before he used the Pillow; he resolves to try it several Nights successively; during which, his Monkey slept very quiet, and he as disturbed. This works a great Way towards the Persuasion of what he had a strong Fancy to believe: Yet, to be better satisfied of the Reality of it, he lays by the Pillow for three or four Nights together; during which time, both he and the Beast slept very quiet.

This added much to his Opinion, that evil Effluvia issued out of those Feathers the Pillow was stuffed with; but as he formerly dreamed, and had many Nights Intermision between those that were entertained with Dreams, he will once more try it, before he concludes that it is so; thus puts it again under his Head that Night: And, as it was the last Experiment, it proved also the most troublesome, he being at that time terrified with more shocking Objects than the preceding; which, tho' they represent fierce and bloody Battles to his Imagination, yet were less terrible to him; having not, as yet, discern'd his native Country engaged therein,

therein, whom now he finds to be the principal Party concern'd, on which all Success depends, and which cannot be strove for without past Expences, and irretrievable Loss of his dear Countrymen; for which his Heart bled as plentifully as for those whom he dream'd he saw in their Gore.

Having with Terror and Grief fatigu'd his Eyes with the most shocking and afflicting Effects of War, Men and Horses lying as thick upon the Ground as Grass in a Meadow, and Streams of Blood running like so many Brooks, supplied by a strong Spring; he lifts up his Eyes to Heaven, imploring an End to that execrable Devourer of Mankind.

And whilst his Eyes were still fixed to the Heavens, he sees Victory rushing thro' thick Clouds of Obstacles approaching to her; which having overcome, she settled over the Army his Countrymen belonged to, over whose Head she shook and flourished her Colours, pointing at approaching Peace, attended with Plenty; but on a sudden there arose an infectious Mist out of the Ground, which cramping the *Englishmen's* Hands, that they could no more use their conquering Arms, this fatal Accident having both encouraged and strengthened the Enemy, they fell on the unfortunate Remains of the Army, with unmerciful Fury; who, now having lost all their Support and Dependence, were most cruelly cut to Pieces; at which most dismal and afflicting Object, he awaked: And tho' this Dream was a sufficient Proof of the Feathers Influence, yet he cannot be satisfied but it must be ominous, having so much Relation to the preceding; therefore sets it down with them; and, for a more certain Conviction of what he had all Cause imaginable to believe, he is resolved to try his Monkey once more the Night following: But the Beast, who had



had not yet forgot the Uneasiness that the Bed had caused him, chose to lie on the Ground; which intirely convinced *Quarll*, that there was a malignant Quality in those Feathers: Wherefore he throws them into the Sea, and fills the Case with a sort of soft Moss, which grew at the Bottom of a particular Tree, on which the Creature lay very quiet ever after.

And as yearly stripping the Eagles of their Eggs, had prevented their Increase, it also favoured and advanced that of the Creatures in the Island, on whose Young they fed; so that the Number of the wild Monkeys being considerably augmented, made their Food scant, which caus'd them now-and-then to come and steal somewhat out of *Quarll's* Ground. *Beaufidelle*, whose good Keeping and warm Lying had made him thrive in Bigness and Strength exceeding his Kind, finding some of them stealing his Master's Roots, beat them away; which obliged those subtle Creatures to come several together, the better to be able to encounter him; which *Quarll* having taken notice of, and being willing to add a new Sport to his usual Diversions, cuts a Stick of the Length and Bigness that the Creature could manage, which he gave him; and, taking his own Staff, exercises it before him, which did the same with his; and, apprehending what Use it was given him for, he had it often in his Hands, and with it drove away the others, when they came, tho' ten or a dozen together; so that the Roots were very well guarded, by his continual Watching; which made those sly and spiteful Creatures watch an Opportunity to take him at a Disadvantage: Thus finding him one Morning, as he was going for Water by himself, as he was wont to do, and being then without his Staff, of which they stood in great Fear, a considerable Number fell upon him, and so bit and beat him,

him, that he lay as dead; but his Master appearing, who, being uneasy at his extraordinary Stay, was gone to see what was the Occasion thereof, put them to the Flight; and they left the poor Creature with just Breath enough to keep its Life in, and scarce Strength sufficient to draw it.

*Quarll*, being come to the Place where his beloved *Beaufidelle* lay in a most dismal bloody Condition, could not forbear shedding Tears to see him thus miserably dying: but, finding still Breath in him, it gave him Hopes of his Recovery: And taking him up in his Arms, with all the Care he could, he hastens home, and gives him a little of the Liquor he had made, which by that time had got both Body and Spirit; then having laid him upon its Bed, and covered him with his Winter-wrapper, he makes a Fire and warms some of the said Liquor, and fresh Butter, wherewith he washes its Sores; so lays him down again, giving him all the careful Attendance he could, during his Illness, which held but one Week; at the End of which he died, to his unspeakable Grief; who, from that time, grew so melancholy, that he had not the Courage to go on with his Memorial; till having a most remarkable Dream about twelve Months after, he changed his Resolution, and proceeded in his Memoirs: And as he set down his Dream, he also did the Death of his beloved Beast, it happening near the same time.

Having spent the Year but dully, for want of his diverting Company at home; to put this as much out of his Mind as he could, he walk'd the spare Hours he had left from his usual Occupation. Thus being one Day somewhat fatigued, having lost his wonted Alacrity, he sat down under the next Cluster of Trees he came at; and, being in a dull Disposition, was soon lull'd asleep, at a lonesome Note of a certain sort of melancholy Bird, which shuns others

others Company (tho' of its own Kind) at all times but in Breeding-time; which, having placed itself in the thickest and shadiest Part of the Grove, where *Quarll* had made choice to lie, falls a singing his melancholy Notes; which being suitable to his Disposition of both Body and Mind, soon lull'd him asleep; during which he dream'd, that he saw an old Man sitting in a large Circle, around which all the Signs of the Zodiac were, and the old Gentleman appear'd extreme busy, stringing of small Beads, some white, and some black; and, when he had strung a certain Number, he began another String, and so on. He had the Curiosity to tell how many he put in a String, so keeps an Account of the next he did begin, and tells just 60: Having made as many of those Strings as there were Beads in each, he puts them together, and begins again to string, mixing white and black as they came to his Hand, twisting every fixtieth String in Parcels, till he had made sixty of them, which he neatly plaits together, proceeding as from the Beginning, and makes 24 of those Plaits, which he weaves together, making a flat Piece of Bead-work, changeable upon black, which, when look'd upon one Way, seem'd pleasant; and, being seen from another, as disagreeable. He work'd on till he had made three hundred and sixty-four such Pieces, then lays them up in a Bundle, and goes to Work again, beginning to string as at first.

Having look'd himself weary with seeing still the same, of which he could make nothing, he goes away leaving the old Gentleman stringing his Beads; who, seeing him go, lays by his Work, and follows him; and having overtaken him, ask'd him, What he had been looking at all that time? He, being surpris'd at the surly Question, modestly replies, He had been admiring his Work; in doing which, he

hop'd

hop'd there was no Offence. No, said the old Man, provided thou learnest something by what thou hast seen. To which he answer'd, It was impossible for him to learn such a mysterious Business, with once seeing it done; so much less, being intirely a Stranger to it. A Stranger to it art thou? reply'd the old Man, in a surly Manner; and hast wasted so much of my Work! I am TIME, whom thou hast often ill-us'd; and those white and black Beads, that thou hast seen me string, are good and bad Moments, I croud into Minutes, which I link into Hours; thus weave Days, wherewith Years are compos'd. Thou hast seen me complete the present, which is reckoned the Year 1713. I tell thee, before the ensuing is ended, I will grace the *British* Throne with an Illustrious Race to the End of Kings Reigns; so vanished. Then he awaked in a great Surprise, and goes home, pondering on his Dream; of which he inferred, that if there be any Signification in the roving Conceptions of the Mind, this must prognosticate the speedy Accession of some great Monarch upon the *English* Throne: So sets down in his Memorial that most remarkable Dream, which happened in 1713. heartily wishing the Accomplishment thereof, for the Quiet and Prosperity of his dear Country.

There happened nothing after, for the Space of four Years, but great Thunders and Lightnings in the Summer, and abundance of Hail and Snow in the Winter, with now-and-then Storms, which left several Sorts of Fishes in the Clifts and Holes of the Rocks, and sometimes Fragments of staved Ships, and batter'd Casks, or broken Chests, with a Plank, and such-like Products of Shipwreck, not worth recording: By which means, for want of Employment, he has several idle and sullen Hours in the Day-time, which his late beloved Animal's  
diverting



diverting Company made slip away with Pleasures and for want of which they now creep slowly on; being loaded with dull and heavy Thoughts, which made those Walks irksome, he at that time took for Ease; that by the Diversity of Objects abroad, his Mind might be withdrawn from his anxious Solitude.

Having one Day perused his Memorial, as he commonly did once a Year, the Dream had in 1713. wherein TIME predicted such great Happiness to his Country the Year ensuing, made such an Impression in his Mind, that he always thought of it. Accordingly, being walking, and the Day proving extraordinary hot, he goes to shelter himself in one of his natural Groves; where, having laid himself down on the Grass, he was soon lull'd asleep; during which, the Idea he had conceived of his former Dream represented to his Imagination a most majestic and graceful Monarch, sitting on a magnificent Throne, round which stood many delightful Olive-plants, which much added to his Lustre.

Having, with a great deal of Pleasure, gaz'd at the most graceful Countenance of the King, which denoted Justice, Equity, Love, and Clemency; he gave Heaven Thanks for the mighty Blessing bestowed on his Country, coming away, in order to return to his Island, with this additional Happiness to the many he already enjoyed.

Being come from Court, on his Journey he meets the same old Gentleman of whom he dream'd the Year before; who, taking him by the Hand, said, I find thou hast been to see the Accomplishment of my Prediction: Now I'll tell thee more.

*Ere One thousand Seven hundred and Sixty is written,  
All Divisions, remember, will cease in Great Britain.*

Next,

Next, I will shew thee what I have done to secure the Accomplishment of my Prophecy: Then takes him to a high Place, from whence he could see into the Cabinets of all the Princes in *Europe*; in several of which, he took notice, lay a vast Heap of rich and costly Things, but confus'd, shapeless, and fit for no Use: Now, said the old Man to him, these are Disappointments, and defeated Projects, made to intercept what I determin'd; then vanishes: At which he awaked, exceeding glad to find himself safe in his blessed Island, and wonderful pleas'd with his Dream, which betokened so much Good to his dear Country. This was the Conclusion of his Records in 1724.

ED. DORRINGTON.

F I N I S.



